

# ARCHITECTURE

THE  
S  
T  
R  
U  
C  
T  
U  
R  
E  
O  
F  
T  
H  
E  
C  
I  
T  
Y  
O  
F  
T  
H  
E  
F  
U  
T  
U  
R  
E





Dean Farrer's copy  
1st edn

207 ml

B. XXI



FREDERICK WILLIS FARRER.

J. W. Farnum

REPLICATION

1852



LECTURES

ON

JUSTIFICATION.

---

BY

JOHN HENRY NEWMAN, B.D.

FELLOW OF ORIEL COLLEGE,

AND VICAR OF ST. MARY THE VIRGIN'S, OXFORD.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. G. & F. RIVINGTON,

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE, PALL MALL;

& J. H. PARKER, OXFORD.

---

1838.



TO THE RIGHT REV. FATHER IN GOD,  
  
RICHARD,  
  
LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD, DEAN OF CANTERBURY,  
  
AND  
  
CHANCELLOR OF THE MOST NOBLE  
  
ORDER OF THE GARTER,  
  
THIS VOLUME IS INSCRIBED  
  
WITH A FEELING  
  
OF VENERATION FOR HIS SACRED ORDER,  
  
OF DUTIFUL SUBMISSION TO HIS DIOCESAN AUTHORITY,  
  
AND OF GRATITUDE FOR KINDNESSES RECEIVED,  
  
BY HIS LORDSHIP'S  
  
FAITHFUL AND ATTACHED SERVANT,  
  
THE AUTHOR.





## ADVERTISEMENT.

---

THE present Volume originated in the following way: It was brought home to the writer from various quarters, that a suspicion existed in many serious minds against certain essential Christian truths, such as Baptismal Regeneration and the Apostolical Ministry, under the impression that they fostered notions of human merit, were prejudicial to the inward life of religion, and incompatible with the doctrine of justifying faith, nay, with express statements on the subject in our Formularies; while confident reports were in circulation that the parties who advocated them, could not disguise even from themselves their embarrassment at those statements: moreover, that though both these classes of doctrines had in matter of fact been con-

tinuously held by the great body of our divines for two centuries and more, yet historical considerations did not weigh with men in general against their own impressions; and that nothing would meet the evil but plain statements on the subject argued out from Scripture,—statements which, if not successful in convincing those who refused to trust Tradition and the Church, might at least be evidence to the world, that the persons so suspected, themselves honestly believed that the doctrines of our Articles and Homilies were not at variance with what they thought they saw in the Sacramental and Ordination Services and other Forms contained in the Prayer Book.

These considerations led him on, first to deliver, and then to publish the following Lectures, in the hope that he might be thereby offering suggestions towards a work, which must be uppermost in the mind of every true son of the English Church at this day,—the consolidation of a theological system, which, built upon those formularies which were framed in the 16th century, and to which all Clergymen are bound, may tend to inform, persuade, and absorb into itself religious minds, which hitherto have fancied that, on the peculiar Protestant ques-

tions they were seriously opposed to one another. Such have been the occasion and the object of these Lectures; and if in them, or in any thing else he has written, there be what readers consider more severe or contentious than such an object admits, let them impute it to his firm belief that no wound is cured which is not thoroughly probed, and that the first step in persuasiveness is decision.

Since they were delivered, Mr. Faber has published his work on the Primitive Doctrine of Justification, with a special reference to Mr. Knox's opinions. Thus the writer finds himself engaged in a discussion even more delicate and anxious than he had anticipated; but, as he originally drew up his remarks without reference to either of those respected authors, so he has judged it best not to take part in a dispute which in no sense belongs to him, and very little to his work. How far he assents to Mr. Knox, how far to Mr. Faber, will there appear; but while the points from which he starts are different, so too are his arguments, as being drawn not from Primitive Christianity but from Scripture.

Another recent work on Justification, Dr. O'Brien's Sermons on Faith, should also here be

mentioned, from the station of the Author; though no reason has occurred for alluding to it elsewhere, as it does but advocate, in opposition to Bishop Bull and the greater number of English Divines, the pure Lutheran theory, which has been sufficiently considered in these Lectures, as far as it fell under their scope.

ORIEL COLLEGE,  
March 12, 1838.

# CONTENTS.

BY SHAFER

---

## LECTURE I.

	PAGE
Faith considered as the Instrument of Justification . . . . .	1

## LECTURE II.

Obedience considered as the Formal Cause of Justification . . . . .	32
---	----

## LECTURE III.

Primary Sense of the Word Justification . . . . .	66
---	----

## LECTURE IV.

Derived Senses of the Word Justification . . . . .	92
--	----

## LECTURE V.

	PAGE
Discordant Senses given to the Word Righteousness . . . . .	115

## LECTURE VI.

On the Gift of Righteousness . . . . .	143
--	-----

## LECTURE VII.

The Characteristics of the Gift of Righteousness . . . . .	176
--	-----

## LECTURE VIII.

Righteousness viewed as a Gift and as a Quality . . . . .	208
---	-----

## LECTURE IX.

Christ's Resurrection the Source of Justification . . . . .	233
---	-----

## LECTURE X.

Justification by Faith only . . . . .	256
---------------------------------------	-----

## LECTURE XI.

On the Nature of Justifying Faith . . . . .	288
---	-----

LECTURE XII.

PAGE

Faith viewed relatively to Rites and Works . . . . . 314

LECTURE XIII.

On Preaching the Gospel . . . . . 358

APPENDIX . . . . . 391





## LECTURE I.

---

### FAITH CONSIDERED AS THE INSTRUMENT OF JUSTIFICATION.

---

JOB xxxviii. 2.

“ Who is this that darkeneth counsel by words without knowledge ? ”

Two main views concerning the mode of our justification are found in the writings of English divines ; on the one hand, that this great gift of our Lord's passion is vouchsafed to those who are moved by God's grace to claim it,—on the other, to those who by the same grace are moved to do their duty. These separate doctrines, justification by faith, and justification by obedience, thus simply stated, are not at all inconsistent with one another ; and by religious men, especially if not divines, will be held both at once, or indifferently either the one or other, as circumstances may determine. Yet, though so compatible in themselves, the case is altogether altered when one or other is made the elementary principle of the gospel system,—when

professed exclusively, developed consistently, and accurately carried out to its limits. Then what seemed at first but two modes of stating the same truth, will be found, the one to be the symbol of Romanism, the other of what is commonly called Protestantism.

It shall be my endeavour in these Lectures to take such a view of Justification, as may approve itself to those among us who hold whether the one or the other doctrine in an unsystematic way, yet falls in with neither when adopted as the foundation or "leading idea" of a theology. Justification by faith only, thus treated, is an erroneous, justification by obedience is a defective view of Christian doctrine. The former is beside, the latter short of the truth. The former legitimately tends to the creed of the rigid Lutherans who opposed Melancthon; the latter to that of Vasquez, Caietan, and other ultra-Romanists. That we are absolutely saved by obedience, that is, by *what we are*, has introduced the proper merit of good works; that we are absolutely saved by faith, or by *what Christ is*, the notion that good works are prejudicial to our salvation.

In this and the following Lecture I propose to set down some chief characteristics of the Lutheran and Roman schemes of justification; and first, of the Lutheran.

The point at which it separates from the doctrine of our Liturgy and Articles is very evident. Our formularies speak of faith as in many ways essen-

tial to our justification, but not as the instrument of originally gaining it<sup>1</sup>. This peculiar instrumentality of faith is the Lutheran tenet here to be discussed; and is plainly the consequence of what has been already adverted to, the attaching an *exclusive* importance to the doctrine of justification by faith only. Those who hold that this doctrine declares only one out of several truths relating to the mode of our justification, even though they express themselves like the strict Lutherans, may really agree with our Church; but it is far otherwise with those who hold it as comprehending all that is told us about that mode.

This then is peculiarly the Lutheran, or what may be called the Continental view, that faith is the instrument of justification<sup>2</sup>. That justification is the application of Christ's merits to the individual<sup>3</sup>, or (as it is sometimes expressed) the imparting a saving interest in Him, will not be denied by English divines. Moreover it will be agreed that His merits are not communicated, or a saving interest secured, except through an instrument divinely appointed. Such an instrument there must be, if

<sup>1</sup> The passage in the Homily on the Passion will be explained in a subsequent Lecture.

<sup>2</sup> *Fides non justificat vel meritorie, vel per modum dispositionis, ut volunt Pontificii, sed organice et per modum apprehensionis, quatenus meritum Christi in verbo Evangelii oblatum complectitur.*—Gerhard. de Justif. § 153.

<sup>3</sup> *Beneficia Christi . . . in quorum applicatione modus ac forma justificationis consistit.*—Gerhard. de Justif. § 148.

man is to take part in the appropriation supposed; and it must be divinely appointed, since it is to convey what God only dispenses. It is then a means appointed by God and used by man, and is almost necessarily involved in the notion of justification. All parties seem to agree as far as this; but when we go on to inquire what it is which God has made His instrument, then, as I have said, we find ourselves upon the main subject of dispute between ourselves and the strict followers of the German Reformer. One Church considers it to be the Sacrament of Baptism<sup>1</sup>; they consider it to be Faith.

These two views indeed need not be, and have not always been, opposed to one another<sup>2</sup>. Baptism may be considered the instrument on God's part, Faith on ours; Faith may receive what Baptism conveys. But if the word *instrument* be taken to mean in the strictest sense the *immediate* means by which the gift passes from the giver to the receiver, there can be but one instrument; and either Baptism will be considered to convey it (whether conditionally or not is a further question), or Faith to seize, or, as it is expressed, to apprehend it,—either Faith will become a subordinate means, con-

<sup>1</sup> Baptismus . . . est signum regenerationis, per quod, *tantum per instrumentum*, recte Baptismum suscipientes, Ecclesie inseruntur, &c.—Artic. XXVII.

<sup>2</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. §§ 64. 153. Vid. Baxter, Life of Faith, iii. 8. error 20.

dition, or qualification, or Baptism a mere sign, pledge, or ratification of a gift otherwise received. And this is the alternative in which the question has practically issued at all times.

I am now to consider the system of doctrine arising out of the belief that Faith, not Baptism, is the instrument of justification. What I think of that system may be gathered from the text I have selected. I have tried to delineate it fairly; at the same time I am sensible that, in doing so, I have not gone to the bottom of the subject. This however is not my business here, but to go to the bottom of the particular theory raised upon it, and of the meaning of those who hold it.

Its advocates then suppose that Faith is the one principle which God's grace makes use of for restoring us to His favour and image. Born in sin, and the heir of misery, the soul needs an utter change of what it is by nature, both within and without, in itself and in God's sight. The change in God's sight is called justification, the change within is regeneration; and faith is the one appointed means of both at once. It is awakened in us by the secret influences of the Holy Spirit, generally co-operating with some external means, as the written word; and, embracing the news of salvation through Christ, it thereby brings it home to us forthwith, and appropriates it, becoming at the same time the element and guarantee of subsequent renewal. As leading the soul to rest on

Christ as its own Saviour, and the propitiation of its own sins in particular, it imparts peace to the conscience, and the comfortable hope of heaven; and, as being living, spiritual, and inseparable from gratitude towards Christ, it abounds in fruit, that is, in good works of every kind.

Such is the first general sketch which may be given of this doctrine, according to which *justification* means a change of God's dealings with us, and *faith* means trust. Our article puts the same sense upon the word *justification*; so we need not stop to consider it here. Let us rather confine ourselves to the examination of what is meant by faith or trust, to which such great effects are ascribed.

The most ready answer to this inquiry is to say what it is *not*. Accordingly, it is not unusual to explain that faith is not mere belief in the being of a God, or in the historical fact that Christ has come on earth, suffered, and ascended. Nor is it the submission of the reason to mysteries, nor the sort of trust which is required for exercising the gift of miracles. Nor, again, is it the knowledge and acceptance of the sacred truths of the New Testament, even the Atonement, however accurate, however implicit. It is neither the faith of Judas who healed diseases, nor of Simon Magus who submitted to baptism, nor of Demas who might be orthodox in his creed, nor of devils who "believe and tremble." All such kinds of faith are fictitious, do not deserve the name, and have no con-

nection whatever, except in the accident of an homonymous term, with that faith which justifies.

Such is supposed to be justifying faith or trust, considered negatively : a more direct account of it is as follows ;—that it is a spiritual principle, altogether different from any thing we have by nature, endued with a divine life and efficacy, and producing a radical change in the soul ; or more precisely, that it is a trust in Christ's merits and in them alone for salvation. It is regarded as that very feeling exercised towards our Almighty Benefactor, which we are on the contrary warned against, when directed towards any thing earthly, as riches, or an arm of flesh. It is the feeling under which we flee in any great temporal danger to some place or means of refuge ; the feeling under which the servant in the parable asked forgiveness of his debt, with a firm belief that it lay solely and entirely with his lord to grant it. It consists then in a firm reliance on His mercifulness towards even the worst of sinners who come to Him,—an experimental conviction that the soul needs a Saviour, and a full assurance that He can and will be such to it,—a thankful acceptance of His perfect work,—an exaltation and preference of Him above all things,—a surrender of the whole man to Him,—a submission to His will,—a perception and approval of spiritual things,—a feeling of the desirableness of God's service,—a hatred of sin,—a confession of utter unworthiness,—a self-



abhorrence of what is past,—and a resolution, in dependance on God's grace, to do better in future. Some such description is often given of it; or in a word, it is spoken of as being, or implying, love, gratitude, devotion, belief, holiness, repentance, hope, dutifulness, and all other graces.

This description however includes too much, as the former said too little; let us then dismiss such popular accounts as meet us at first opening the subject, and endeavour to fix our minds on it more steadily. What then shall we say that justifying faith really is? The Lutheran divines define it to be a “fiduciary apprehension<sup>1</sup>” of gospel mercy,—a belief, not only that Christ has died for the sins of the world, but that He has died specially for the individual so believing, and a sense of confident trust in consequence<sup>2</sup>, a claiming as one's own, with full persuasion of its efficacy, what He has done and suffered for all. This is an intelligible account of it, but not at all sufficient for the purpose, for this plain reason; that justifying faith is always supposed to lead to good works, but such a confident persuasion may exist without any fruit following to warrant it. Trusting faith is not necessarily lively faith. The servant in the parable knew he owed his master a large sum; he knew

<sup>1</sup> *Propria et specifica fidei justificantis forma est fiducialis apprehensio Christi Mediatoris ac beneficiorum ejus, quæ in verbo Evangelii nobis offeruntur.*—Gerhard. de Justif. § 117.

<sup>2</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. § 127, et seq.

his master only could remit the debt. He applied to him; he appropriated to himself his mercy, in the only way he could, by falling down and throwing himself upon it. He did not in any degree trust in himself or in any thing else; he discovered no pride, no self-righteousness; his trust was implicit,—unless we choose to say that his promise for the future interfered with it. Yet he went away and sinned; trust then is not necessarily lively faith.

Shall we then define justifying faith to be faith which is lively? This is a more adequate account of it, but a less intelligible one. For what is meant by lively? is it to be explained as merely that, which *in the event* is fruitful, without having in itself any thing discriminating or characteristic? But that which results in good works must have some principle in it which is the cause of that result; and this is confessed by calling it lively. What then is the *life* of faith? What is that which makes it what it is? What is that, not *on account* of which it is acceptable (for we all acknowledge that Christ is the only meritorious cause of our acceptance), but what is it which makes it to be what it is,—(for Christ's sake) acceptable? What is the formal quality of justifying faith? Let us but ascertain this, and we shall be able to set down a sufficient definition of it.

Many divines accordingly, of various schools, consider this life of faith to be love; and it must be

confessed that even the strict followers of the German Reformer speak in a way to sanction the notion. Thus at all times they have indulged in descriptions of faith as an adhering to Christ, a delighting and rejoicing in Him, and a giving oneself up to Him. Luther, however, himself, as we shall presently find, is most earnestly opposed to such a doctrine, as if it denied the innate life and power of faith as such, and associated another principle with it as a joint instrument in justification <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Non enim dicit [Paulus] Charitas est efficax, sed, Fides est efficax; non, Charitas operatur, sed, Fides operatur. Charitatem vero facit fidei velut instrumentum, per quod operatur.—In Gal. v. 6. (f. 407.) Illa charitas, vel sequentia opera, nec informant meam fidem, nec ornant; sed fides mea informat et ornatur charitatem. In Gal. ii. 19. (f. 316.) Quisquis spiritualis vitæ particeps factus per fidem, is eandem exerit per charitatem, sicut per externas operationes vita hominis naturalis manifestatur.—Gerhard. de Justif. § 153. Yet Melancthon and Calvin take the sober tone of our Homilies in denying that justifying faith can for a moment exist without love, contrary to Luther and his school. “Fides significat fiduciam; in fiducia inest dilectio, ergo etiam dilectione sumus justi.” *Concedo in fiducia inesse dilectionem*, et hanc virtutem et plerasque alias *adesse oportere*; sed cum dicimus, Fiducia sumus justi, non intelligatur nos propter virtutis istius dignitatem, sed per misericordiam recipi propter Mediatorem quem tamen oportet fide apprehendi. Ergo hoc dicimus *correlative*.—Melancth. Loc. Com. f. 213. Vid. Calv. Justific. iii. 11. n. 6. What is the real difference between saying with these writers that faith is not justifying unless love or holiness be *with* it; or with Bellarmine, that it is not so, unless love be *in* it? What is the distinction between the metaphors conveyed by *in* and *with*? between *never without* and

Let us for argument's sake grant it; but, if so, the question recurs, *what* is the faith that justifies?

Considering how important its office is, considering what exclusive stress is laid upon it in the school of doctrine under review, considering what severe protests are raised against any thing but faith, whether grace or good work, being ascribed a share in our justification, considering that the knowledge of our possessing true faith is made a characteristic of the healthy state of that true faith<sup>1</sup>, surely we may fairly demand in the outset, *what* faith is; what that is, as separate from every thing else, which exclusively of every thing else is the instrument of so great a work. Surely it is fair to ask *whither* we are being led, before we consent to move a foot. They who are vehement about faith *only* justifying, are bound to speak only and distinctly of faith.

In answer to this objection, it is usual in the first place to prohibit the consideration of it. We are

*ever within?* e. g., Bellarmine says, "Apostolus Paulus explicat dilectionem formam esse *extrinsecam* fidei, non *intrinsecam*, et quæ det illi, non ut sit, *sed ut moveatur*."—In Justif. ii. 4. And Gerhard, Fides a dilectione sejuncta non justificat, quia non potest a dilectione nisi *νοηματικῶς* sejungi; et si a dilectione sejungatur, non est vera fides.—§ 175. The sole question is, whether love *communicates* to faith its justifying power. What is meant by *communicates*? Luther's doctrine, on the other hand, that justifying faith *is* without love when it justifies, is plain enough, and no matter of words.

<sup>1</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. § 88.

told that such inquiries are an undue exaltation of human reason, or at least an unseasonable exercise of it: that to contemplate and dwell upon faith at all, or to ask any questions about it, is a fundamental mistake, considering we should fix our eyes and rest our hearts on its Divine Object only. Faith, it appears, is to be defined, not by its *nature*, but by its *office*; not by what *it is*, but by what it *does*. It is trust *in Christ*, and it differs from all other kinds of faith in That towards which it reaches forward and on which it rests. Thus it differs from historical faith, or intellectual knowledge, that it is a taking Christ for our portion, and (to use a familiar word) closing with His offers of mercy. It consists, as has been already said, in this “fiduciary apprehension” of the merits of Christ, in a willingness, most opposite to the bent of our proud nature, to be saved fully and freely with an everlasting salvation, “without money and without price,” without merit, or labour, or pain, or sacrifice, or works of any kind on our part.

Or to put the subject in another point of view;—the gospel mercy is proclaimed openly and universally to all who will accept it. No special state of mind is necessary for appropriating it; a person has not to ask himself if he is fit; his warrant for making it his, is the freeness of the proclamation. “Whosoever will, let him take of the water of life freely;” if a man feels his need of being justified, and desires it, he has but to ask, he has but to look

at the great work of Redemption, and it is his own in all the fulness of its benefits. Faith then as little admits of a definition as putting out the hand or receiving alms; it has as little of a permanent form or shape as running, or kneeling; it is a momentary act or motion rather than a moral virtue or grace, though the work of the Spirit, and productive of all virtues, or at least it must not be regarded as such. It is the reaching forward of the heart towards Christ, determining and resting in the thought of Him as its limit, and thus deriving its character, and, as it may be called, its form from Him<sup>1</sup>.

This is the first view taken of the dilemma I have stated, by those whom it is directed against. It is urged on them that either faith is more than personal trust, and if so, that addition, whatever it is, is a joint instrument with it in our justification; or that it is nothing more, and then it is not necessarily living faith. And they answer that to inquire what it is in faith which makes it justifying, *as distinct* from all other kinds of faith, is all one with asking what it is *on account* of which faith justifies; that the discriminating mark is the same as the meritorious cause; and therefore that Christ Him-

<sup>1</sup> Ego soleo, ut hanc rem melius captem, sic imaginari, quasi nulla sit in corde meo qualitas, quæ fides vel charitas vocetur, sed in loco ipsarum pono ipsum Christum, et dico, hæc est justitia mea, *ipse est qualitas* et formalis, ut vocant, justitia mea, ut sic me liberem ab interitu legis et operum.—Luther. ad Brentium Ep. apud Gerh. de Justif. § 163.

self and He alone, the Object of the faith, is what makes the faith what it is, and to name, to hint, to look for any other cause, is to admit what Luther calls "the cursed gloss of Sophists<sup>1</sup>." However, such a reply is evidently no real explanation of the difficulty. Accordingly, when brought fairly to consider it, they seem frankly to confess that it is a difficulty, and that it must be left to itself. They seem to allow that faith *is* in itself something more than trust, though man may be unable to say what it is more. "What is not really faith may doubtless," they say, "appear to be faith; of course there must ever be false brethren in the church; yet there may be true, there must, there will be true nevertheless. If any pretend to faith or trust, and do not go on to obey, then they *have not* real trust. This is the proper inference, not that trust may exist, yet without obedience<sup>2</sup>. Still it may be true, that the only way of becoming righteous in God's sight, the only way of becoming really fruitful

<sup>1</sup> Pereant itaque sophistæ cum sua maledicta glossa, et damnetur vox illa fides formata; et dicamus constanter ista vocabula, fides formata, informis, acquisita, &c. diaboli esse portenta, nata in perniciem doctrinæ et fidei Christianæ.—In Gal. iii. 12. (f. 347.) Bp. Bull, on the contrary, holds the doctrine of fides formata.

<sup>2</sup> *Non est in arbitrio aut potestate nostra situm hanc libertatem, per Evangelium jam invulgatam, celare homines aut revocare, quia Christus eam nobis donavit, ac suâ morte peperit. Neque possumus illos porcos, qui toto impetu ruunt in licentiam carnis, cogere ut corpore et rebus suis serviant aliis. Ideo*

in well-doing is thus to embrace and appropriate Christ's atoning power as ours in the first instance, without standing still to speculate whether our trust is as it should be, whether we embrace and appropriate it as we ought. This is God's way, and we may safely leave the difficulty to Him who has imposed it on us. We may be unskilled, if it so happen, in definitions and distinctions; we may be unable to determine *how* true and false faith differ; seeds which are essentially distinct, may baffle the discrimination of mortal eye; yet after all we are told, simply to look at Christ and to believe that we are justified in order to our being so; and this is all that concerns us."

Moreover, this supposed difficulty of distinguishing between true and false faith is not (it may be urged) in reality so great as it appears in controversy. It does not follow that faith may not admit of being ascertained, because we cannot define it in the language of human science. If there be such a thing as a *real* apprehension of Christ, it must necessarily be beyond explanation. It is a feeling, a spiritual taste, perception, sight, known only to him who has the blessedness to experience it. It is something beyond and above nature. It is a

*quod possumus, facimus; hoc est, admonemus diligenter eos debere hoc præstare. Si his monitis nostris nihil efficiamus, committimus rem Deo. . . . Interim tamen hoc nos solatur, quod labor et diligentia nostra non est inanis apud pios.*—Luther in Gal. v. 13. Vid. also Calvin. Institut. iii. 2. n. 11, 12.



state of mind for which no terms have been invented. We cannot explain what sight is to the blind; in like manner, before the mind is enlightened by God's grace, it cannot discern those tokens which are to the true believer plain demonstration that he does believe and is under no delusion. If words be attempted, they must be used in new senses, unintelligible to the world at large. Hence this doctrine, however true, will never appear to advantage, or be described with justice, in controversy, which employs the language of the unregenerate. It is true its maintainers *have* attempted to argue and refute their opponents; but to do so was a mistake; they ought not to argue where they cannot refute; for from the nature of the case they will always appear, to all but themselves and those who agree with them, defective in their definitions and illogical in their reasonings. Yet all the while it may be true, that those who are savingly converted are converted by means of this simple trust, which the self-deceived and carnal misuse, and which controversialists stumble at.

I have been endeavouring to represent the extreme Protestant idea of justifying faith in its *internal consistence*; to examine how its parts hang together, and how it disposes of objections which arise, apart from the arguments on which it rests. What these are will come next to be considered, but the above seems to be the doctrine resulting from them, viz.:—Faith, an act or motion of the mind

produced indeed by Divine Grace, but valueless in itself, applies to the soul the merits of Him on whom it looks, gaining at the same time His sanctifying aid, and developing itself in good works; which works are the only evidence we can have of its being true or not. It justifies then, not as being lively or fruitful, though this is an inseparable property of it, but as *apprehending* Christ, which is its essence <sup>1</sup>.

The alleged grounds of this doctrine, which of course is the principal point to be considered, are twofold, Scripture and the reason of the thing. As to Scripture, all those many texts which speak of the freeness of salvation, one of which was just now cited, are brought in behalf of the principle that confident trust is the sole qualification for being justified. "Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you; for *every one* that seeketh findeth;"—"Ho, *every one* that thirsteth, come ye to the waters;"—"What things soever ye desire when ye pray, *believe that ye receive* them and ye shall have them <sup>2</sup>." No words, it is urged, can express more strongly the title of every one who hears of the great gift of God, to make it his own, and his immediate possession of it,

<sup>1</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. § 179. Calvin. Institut. iii. 18. n. 10. This doctrine has sometimes been thus expressed by its defenders, "Fides, foeta bonis operibus, justificat ante partum." Vid. Bull. Harm. i. 6. § 2. Vid. the difference between Luther and Melancthon on the subject in 1541; in Seckendorf, lib. 3. § 87.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. vii. 7. Is. lv. 1. Mark xi. 24.

without any intermediate channel or instrument of gaining it, if he does but believe he has it.

To these must be added the more distinct announcements of St. Paul about faith in particular; which, without going the extent of teaching we are justified by faith *only*, yet, as no one can deny, speak of the connexion of faith with justification in a very remarkable way. I mean such texts as these:—"Being justified freely by His grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through *faith* in His blood;" and again, "Being *justified by faith* we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ;" and again, "Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith *without the deeds of the law*;"—texts which certainly do speak of our being justified by faith in *some* very especial sense, and without the aid of deeds of the law, and therefore (it is urged) without the aid of any instrument, condition, or qualification at all, whether Christian grace or good work.

Scripture then, by telling us to come for the gifts of grace and we shall at once receive them, is supposed to imply that they are dispensed without any intermediate channel between God and the soul; on the ground that they would not be *freely* given, if given *through* any of God's servants or ministers, Angel or Apostle, Prophet or Priest. Such is the Scripture evidence for this view of justification; but it is considered, instead of resting on evidence from

Scripture, rather to be itself an evidence of the inspiration of Scripture. Other systems (it seems) have attempted to melt the heart and restore our corrupt nature by severity, threats, or motives of expediency; but the gospel alone has dared to trust itself to the principle of free and unconditional favour, yet with success as signal as has been the failure of all other methods; for the mere preaching of reconciliation with God, the command to take and enjoy the blessings of redemption, has been found to act upon the soul in a remarkable way for its conversion and renewal. This argument has sometimes been practically considered as a substitute for elaborate Scripture evidence, as if it approved itself to men's minds at once, as a short and easy proof of the truth of the doctrine;—for though numberless conversions have been made through a course of ages to the Christian faith *without it*, (utter revolutions indeed in the principles and framework of society, the laws of nations, and the habits both of barbarian and educated minds,) still (it is said) these were not attended by an enlightened and heartfelt perception of the free grace of the gospel, and its abolition of all rites and ordinances; and though doubtless, *since* this instrument has been used, multitudes have abused it to their everlasting ruin, yet all this does not interfere with the blessedness of its effects, where it has operated on a truly penitent heart, and been used for its legitimate purposes with meditation, prayer, watchfulness, godly fear, and a conscientious walk.

Now let us come to another argument urged in behalf of the sole instrumentality of Faith in our justification. This is derived from (what is called) its *apprehensive* power<sup>1</sup>. Faith alone of all the fruits of the Spirit, and not love, hope, fear, or resignation, contemplates the expiatory sacrifice of Christ; and as having it for its *Object*, not unnaturally has it for its *possession*. It is the instrument of appropriating the *gift*, because it is the means by which the mind receives the *news* of it. Faith, it is argued, *sees* the purchased redemption, and therefore must be able to *take* and *apply* it. It is the eye and therefore is the hand. Or in a word, it *apprehends* Christ; a term, which suitably conveys what is meant, as including both ideas, of accepting the

<sup>1</sup> Si fides, antequam sequantur opera, Christum *apprehendit*, verum esse oportet, solam fidem redemptionem sibi *applicare*, id quod est justificari.—Luther. Libell. ad Ed. August. Vid. also in Gal. iii. 13. (f. 351.) Fides justificat apprehendendo Christum; eadem vero justificans fides hanc habet proprietatem, quod Deo summum obsequium præstet et gloriam veritatis ei tribuat; est ergo unicum illa medium, per quod promissionibus divinis de remissione peccatorum invitemur, et *hac ratione* bonorum in illa oblatorum participes reddimur.—Gerhard. de Justif. § 156. Nec aliud volunt nostri cum dicunt sola fide justificamur, quam quod jam dixi, gratis fide propter Christum consequimur remissionem peccatorum, non propter nostram dignitatem. . . . Suntque *correlative* intelligendæ hæ sententiæ, Fide, id est, fiducia Christi sumus justi, hoc est propter Christum sumus justi.—Melanchthon, Loci Theol. de vocab. Gratia. (Op. vol. 1. f. 202.) Vid. also Apol. Conf. Augustan. (f. 64.) Loc. Theol. in voc. Fidei (f. 197. 199.)

message and receiving the gift, without marking the distinction between them.

This however is but a portion of the argument derived from the apprehensive power of Faith. It is considered indeed to justify *correlatively*<sup>1</sup>, as it is expressed, from the supposed *fitness* that the principle through which the soul desires and owns God's mercy should *ipso facto* be the instrument of obtaining it; but something is alleged in the very nature of faith, as well as in its function, corroborative of such a conclusion. For, as being the mere turning and adhering of the soul to Christ, it may be said by a figure of speech to live in Him in whose image it rests. Other graces are complete in themselves; or at least have something in themselves excellent and praiseworthy. Thus they do not lead to Christ, but remain within their own limits, contented (as it were) with themselves, and sufficient for their own enjoyment. But faith has no such inward principle on which to depend; it looks out of doors for that in which it centers, and is altogether animated and absorbed by its divine Object. It depends upon, it holds of the thought of Him; it is alive, only as the thought of Him pervades and informs it. Since then the thought of Him is ever present in it, therefore He may be said to be ever present in it, or (what is supposed to be the same thing) He is *spiritually* present in it; and if He is present, His merits are present in it, and

<sup>1</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. § 163, &c. &c.

are in this way conveyed to the soul which exercises it. In this sense Luther seems to speak as if Christ were the *forma fidei*<sup>1</sup>, or that which makes faith what it is, justifying; for Christ being the One true Justifier, and the thought of Him being (as it were) He himself, and Faith being filled with the thought of Him, a justifying power is imparted to faith which in itself it has not. On the other hand his opponents, whether Romanists or Anglicans, are accustomed to urge that the thought of Christ may be possessed by those who have not Christ, and therefore is in no sense the form or characteristic principle of justifying faith; rather that love, as I noticed above, is the true form, the discriminating mark and moulding principle under which belief is converted into faith and made justifying. This doctrine, however, Luther rejects with great abhorrence, from the notion that it makes our thoughts centre on ourselves, cuts off the communication between earth and heaven, fixes our faith on the love with which it is supposed to be instinct, instead of its mounting up worthless, rude, and unformed, to receive subsistence, fashion, and acceptableness in Christ. By way of protest against the doctrine, which he calls "a most pestilent and Satanical gloss," he declares, very differently from the

<sup>1</sup> Christus in me vivit; is est mea forma, ornans fidem meam, ut color vel lux parietem ornat.—Luther. in Gal. ii. 20. (f. 318.) Fides justificans non caret debita forma, quæ est fiducialis apprehensio Christi.—Gerhard. de Justif. § 120. Vid. also § 71. (col. 505.) Vid. Calvin, Instit. iii. 11. 20.

language of our Homilies, that faith justifies *before* and *without* love<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Fides . . . quando in proprio suo officio est, nullum prorsus *objectum* habet, quam Jesum Christum, Filium Dei, traditum pro peccatis totius mundi. *Non respicit charitatem*; non dicit, Quid fui? quid merui? sed quid fuit Christus? . . . Quare quæ sophistæ docuerunt de fide justificante, si sit charitate formata, mera verborum portenta sunt. Ea enim fides, quæ apprehendit Christum Filium Dei, et eo ornatur, non quæ includit charitatem, justificat. Nam fidem, si certa et firma esse debet, nihil apprehendere oportet, quam solum Christum, &c. . . . Quare, qui Christum fide apprehendit, quantumvis lege perterrefiat, &c. . . . gloriari potest se justum esse. Quomodo aut per quid? *per gemmam Christum*, quem fide possidet. Hoc adversarii non intelligunt; ideo abjiciunt gemmam Christum, et *in locum ejus reponunt charitatem quam dicunt gemmam esse*. Luther. in Gal. ii. 4, 5. (f. 296, 7.) Hic nihil te moveat impia glossa sophistarum, qui dicunt, fidem tum demum justificare si accesserit charitas et bona opera. Ista pestilenti glossa, hanc et similes sententias in Paulo, quibus diserte tribuit justificationem fidei, obscurarunt et depravarunt sophistæ. . . . Et pro hac sua pernicioosa et pestilenti glossa comprobanda, allegant adversarii locum, I Cor. xiii. Si linguis hominum, &c. . . . Vitanda est ut venenum infernale, concludendumque cum Paulo, sola fide non fide formata charitate nos justificari; quare non isti formæ gratificanti tribuenda est vis justificandi, sed fidei, quæ apprehendit et possidet in corde ipsum Christum Salvatorem. Hæc fides *sine* et *ante* charitatem justificat.—in Gal. ii. 16. (f. 309, 310.) Vid. also in iii. 12. Si formatam fidem distinguerent contra falsam seu fictam fidem, nihil me offenderet ista illorum distinctio. Sed . . . faciunt . . . duplicem fidem, informem et formatam. Hanc pestilentissimam et Satanicam glossam, non possum non vehementer detestari. . . . Juxta hoc pestilens figmentum sophistarum, fides illa misera virtus, erit quoddam informe chaos, nullius operis, efficaciam, et vitæ, sed tantum passiva



It follows that by a strong figure, Faith may be said to *claim* the promised blessings, as if it were meritorious, that is, by virtue of the intimate correspondence and sympathy between it and Christ. Hence we may be said to be justified, not only *by* or *through* Christ (as our Article words it), but on *account* of faith; for faith is absorbed into its Object, of which it is but the outward receptacle, and consequently the symbol and representative. And in this sense faith is considered as imputed to us for righteousness, by a mode of speech; Christ really, who is spiritually present in the faith, and not the faith itself, being our sole and true Righteousness, in which our acceptance with God consists<sup>1</sup>. And here additional light is thrown upon the statement that we are justified by faith *only*, faith not thereby

materia. Ista omnia blasphema in Deum et Satanica sunt . . . nam si charitas est forma fidei, ut ipsi nugantur, statim cogor sentire ipsam charitatem esse principalem et maximam partem Christianæ religionis; et sic amitto Christum, sanguinem, vulnera, et omnia beneficia ejus, et inhæreo charitati, et diligo ac venio in facere morale, ut Papa, Gentilis philosophus, aut Turca.—In Gal. iii. 11. (f. 346.) Vid. also ff. 312 (1 & 2), 316 (1 & 2), 318 (2), 347 (2). Vid. also Melanchthon. Apol. Conf. August. (f. 67.) Calvin. Institut. iii. 2. n. 8. 41, &c.

<sup>1</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. § 163. For *propter fidem*, vid. (e. g.) Luther. in Gal. ii. 16. (f. 308.) Est Christiana justitia imputatio divina pro justitia vel ad justitiam, propter fidem in Christum, vel propter Christum.—In Gal. iii. 6. (f. 336.) Vid. the whole passage. In this sense he calls faith *formalis justitia*, in Gal. ii. 16. (f. 308.) See also a very eloquent passage on the same subject in f. 334, Paulus his verbis, &c. Also Melanchth. Apol. (f. 70.)

excluding the necessity of works, nor becoming meritorious, but the formula “by faith only, not by works,” meaning “by the merit of Christ only, not of works, nor even of faith.”

This is an outline of a scheme of doctrine which, with more or less of system, is very prevalent at this day, and which has been usually associated with the name of Luther. The reasons which led to his insisting upon it were chiefly the two following, both arising from his opposition to the Roman doctrine concerning good works;—first, his wish to extirpate all notions of human merit; next, to give peace and satisfaction to the troubled conscience<sup>1</sup>.

In effecting these objects, however, he also adopted another tenet, which in his system is the counterpart of the sole instrumentality of Faith. He taught that the Moral Law was not binding on the conscience of the Christian; that Christ had fulfilled it by His own obedience; that He is our Righteousness in the sense of His obedience being the substitute for ours in the sight of God’s justice; and that Faith is the instrument by which that Righteousness becomes ours. Such a view of the gospel covenant met both the alleged evils against which it was provided. For if Christ has obeyed the Law instead of us, it follows, that every believer has at once a perfect righteousness, yet not his own; that it is not his own, precludes all boasting, that it is perfect

<sup>1</sup> These two points are treated of by Calvin. Institut. iii. 13.

precludes all anxiety. The conscience is unladen, without becoming puffed up. With a few remarks under each of these heads I shall conclude.

1. First then, as to the proper merit of works; it is urged that such a doctrine is not banished from theology, if works have any share whatever in our justification, in spite of St. James's affirming that they have. It is possible to *rest* in our works—they do not imply or remind of Christ's all-sufficiency; but we cannot lean upon our faith, for in fact (as I have said) it has no real substance or strength of its own, nothing to support us; it but gives way and carries us back and throws us on the thought of Christ, in whom it lives. It is replied, that since no good works can be done but through the grace of God, they are but evidence that that grace is with the doer; so that to view them as sharing in our justification tends to elate us, neither more nor less than the knowledge that we are under divine influences is elating. It is urged however in answer, that we are not concerned with formal admissions and distinctions, but with practical impressions; that to say that Christ is but the ultimate source of justification, and that our own doings, though through His grace, are the proximate cause, is in fact to fix the mind on ourselves, not on Him; whereas to teach that He actually in His own person has obeyed the Law for each of us is a most efficacious means of deterring us from thinking about our own obedience to it at all, and

faith again, however much insisted on, has so little in it to recommend it or to rest in, so little holy, precious, or praiseworthy, as not to seduce us to self-gratulation or spiritual pride or pharisaical exclusiveness, seeing our best doings in the Spirit are intrinsically neither better nor more acceptable to the Divine Majesty than those natural righteousnesses, which Scripture calls "filthy rags," and "an unclean thing." On the other hand, this doctrine does not tend to widen the way which Christ has pronounced to be narrow; for, though faith is so worthless, and therefore so safe a feeling, yet it is not easy to acquire. The pride of man resists (it is said) this way of salvation from its very easiness, and is not subdued without much inward conflict<sup>1</sup>. In proportion however as faith takes its place, its divine Object is contemplated by the mind, presented not intercepted by that which is the medium of its possessing it.

Another similar use of these doctrines is to secure us against self-contemplation. Prayer, alms, fasting, and the like, which are but modes of approaching God, will be dwelt on as ends, as objects for self-complacency, and sources of those spiritual

<sup>1</sup> Luther. in Gal. iii. 2. (f. 331.) It would seem, however, as if the stricter Lutherans, who maintained that faith justified before and without love, made much more of the dignity of faith than the school of Melancthon, who considered it to be inseparable from love, and to justify *correlative*. Vid. Bellarm. de Justif. i. 12. Gerhard. de Justif. § 163.

benefits which professedly are but sought through them, unless Christ's righteousness be insisted on as that in which immediately our justification lies, and faith that by which it is gained<sup>1</sup>.

It follows moreover from what has been observed, that though it may be scripturally said that Faith is taken for righteousness, yet that according to the system before us, it will be safer, as well as more correct, to say that Christ is our righteousness; lest we should think that our justification lies in any thing in us, and not in Christ.

2. Reliance then on self in all its shapes is one of the errors which the doctrine of justification by faith as its instrument, and Christ's righteousness as its form, is supposed to extirpate; the other is the state of doubt about our justification which must ever attend the belief that it depends on our graces and works, though produced by divine influences. It is urged that the great end of the gospel is to give peace to the troubled conscience, to take from it the fear of eternal death, and to assure it of pardon and acceptance with God. Without the certainty of salvation, at least so far as to know that, were we to die at the present moment we should be secure of heaven<sup>2</sup>, whatever may be our chance of losing it in time to come, but without an assurance that we are now sinless and unreprove-

<sup>1</sup> Luther. in Gal. ii. 20. (f. 318.)

<sup>2</sup> Gerhard. de Justif. § 81, &c.

able in God's sight for Christ's sake, that no charge lies against us, that all our past sins up to this hour are absolutely forgiven, and that no future judgment on them need be dreaded, the gospel has hardly done its work, but leaves us, as far as our satisfaction is concerned, under the bonds of the Law <sup>1</sup>. Now if this certainty of our present salvation be a part of our Christian privileges, evidently it can never be attained by works <sup>2</sup>, because we can never know when we have done enough; whereas Faith is a principle which a person may easily satisfy himself that he has, which is naturally adapted to be its own evidence, and which moreover inspires its possessor with this peculiar comfort, that he has nothing more to do to secure his salvation, and need but to hold on as he is, looking at Christ's perfect work, and appropriating it to himself. Christ has fulfilled the Law for us; faith makes that fulfilment ours; and places us above the Law. In acting conformably with it, we are not performing a duty; we are merely stooping from that heavenly state in which Christ has placed us, and conde-

<sup>1</sup> Is [Christus] solus dominetur in justitia, securitate, lætitia, et vita, ut conscientia læta *obdormiat* in Christo, *sine ullo sensu legis*, peccati, et mortis.—Luther. in Gal. iv. 3. (f. 373.)

<sup>2</sup> Equidem si ab operibus æstimandum sit qualiter affectus sit erga nos Dominus, id ne tenui quidem conjectura possemus assequi fateor; sed quum simplici et gratuitæ promissioni respondere fides debet, nullus ambigendi locus relinquitur.—Calvin. Institut. iii. 2. n. 38.

scending to take part in things of this earth<sup>1</sup>. To allow we are under it, is (it is said) necessarily polluting our conscience with a sense of guilt; for since we all sin continually, while we subject ourselves to our conscience, we can as little enjoy the assurance of our salvation, as we can exercise implicit faith in the all-sufficiency of Christ's merits. Nor must it be hence inferred that the Christian is not in fact fruitful in good works, but that they

<sup>1</sup> Dicimus autem supra quod lex in Christiano non debeat excedere limites suos, sed tantum habere dominium in carnem, quæ et ei subjecta sit et sub ea maneat; hoc ubi fit, consistit lex intra limites suos. Si vero vult occupare conscientiam, et hic dominari, vide ut tum sis bonus dialecticus, recte divides, et legi non plus tribuas quam eitribuendum est; sed dicas, Lex, tu vis ascendere in regnum conscientiæ, et ibi dominari, et eam arguere peccati, et gaudium cordis tollere, quod habeo ex fide in Christum, et me in desperationem adigere ut desperem et peream. Hoc præter officium tuum facis, consiste intra limites tuos, et exerce dominium in carnem. Conscientiam autem ne attingas mihi; sum enim baptizatus, et per Evangelium vocatus ad communionem justitiæ et vitæ æternæ, ad regnum Christi, in quo acquiescit conscientia mea, ubi nulla est lex, &c. . . . Hanc [justitiam Christi] cum intus habeo, *descendo de cælo*, tanquam pluvia fœcundans terram, hoc est, prodeo foras in *aliud regnum et facio bona opera quæcunque mihi occurrent*, &c. . . . Quicumque certo novit Christum esse justitiam suam, is non solum ex animo et cum gaudio bene operatur in vocatione sua, sed subjicit se quoque per charitatem magistratibus, &c. . . . quia scit Deum hoc velle et placere hanc obedientiam.—Luther. Argum. in Gal. (f. 274.) Perhaps it is a happy thing that all of Luther's followers are not "boni dialectici" enough to carry out his principles this length.

flow naturally from such a simple trust as has been described; nor that he is at liberty to violate the Law, but only that it is not a matter of *conscience* to him to keep it<sup>1</sup>; nor that he will not labour to grow in grace, but only that he is not more acceptable to God if he does<sup>2</sup>; nor that he will not be watchful against falling away, but only that he is sure (unless his faith is weak<sup>3</sup>) that he has salvation at present.

And now perhaps enough has been said in explanation of a theology very common in this day, which differs from our own in these two main points among others;—in considering that Faith and not Baptism is the primary instrument of justification, and that the Faith which has this gift exercises it without the exercise or even presence of love.

<sup>1</sup> *Quamquam sic liber est [Christianus] ab omnibus operibus, debet tamen rursus se exinanire hac in libertate, formam servi accipere, in similitudinem hominum fieri, &c. Luther. de Lib. Christ. f. 9. (2.)*

<sup>2</sup> *Episcopus sacer, templum consecrans, pueros confirmans, aut aliud quippiam officii sui faciens, non consecratur iis ipsis operibus in Episcopum, &c. . . ita Christianus per fidem suam consecratus bona facit opera, sed non per hæc magis sacer aut Christianus efficitur; hæc enim solius fidei est, &c.—Luther. de Lib. Christ. (f. 8.)*

<sup>3</sup> *Si . . . adest conscientie pavor, signum est hanc justitiam ablatam, gratiam amissam esse à conspectu, et Christum obscuratum non videri.—Luther. Argum. in Gal. (f. 273.)*



## LECTURE II.

---

### OBEDIENCE CONSIDERED AS THE FORMAL CAUSE OF JUSTIFICATION.

---

COL. ii. 16, 17.

“ Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days, which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.”

I HAVE hitherto been employed upon a view of justification which happens to be very extensively professed in our Church at this day, either systematically or not ; and has great influence *as* a system from the numbers who hold it *without* system. I cannot for an instant believe that all these numbers would adhere to it, if they understood what it really means when brought out as distinct from other views on the subject, and made consistent with itself. They profess it, because it is what is put into their hands, and they graft it upon a temper of mind in many cases far higher and holier than it.

Now I come to consider the opposite scheme of doctrine, which is not unsound or dangerous in itself, but defective,—truth, but not the whole truth; viz., that justification consists in “renewal of the Holy Ghost<sup>1</sup>.” In describing it then, I am describing not a perversion, but what Saints and Martyrs have in substance held in every age, though not apart from other truths which serve to repress those tendencies to error, which it, in common with every other separate portion of the Scripture creed, contains, not in itself, but when exclusively cherished by the human mind. But the Roman Church does profess it thus detached and isolated; it so holds it as to exclude other true doctrine; to use its technical language, it considers spiritual renewal to be the “*unica formalis causa*,” the one and only true description of justification; and this is the cardinal and critical difference between it and those divines, whether of the Ancient Church or our own, who seem most nearly to agree with it.—Now, however, to

<sup>1</sup> Tit. iii. 5. Hoc est *justitia Dei*, quam non solum docet per Legis præceptum, verum etiam *dat per Spiritus donum*. August. de Spir. et Lit. 56. Cum timore et tremore suam ipsorum salutem operentur; Deus est enim qui operatur in eis et velle et operari pro bona voluntate. *Hoc est justitia Dei, hoc est quod Deus donat* homini, cum justificat impium. Hanc Dei justitiam ignorantes superbi Judæi, &c. August. ad Honoratum, 53. 34. Ep. 140. legimus justificari in Christo qui credunt in eum propter occultam communicationem et inspirationem gratiæ spiritualis, qua quisque hæret Domino, unus spiritus est. August. de Peccat. Rem. i. 11.

describe it, so far as it may be considered as common to the Fathers, the Romanists, and (to say the very least) the greater number of our own writers.

It is argued then, that since man fell, he has lain under one great need, in which all other needs are included, in supplying which all blessings are secured; and which, in proportion as he has understood his real state, he has ever desired, ever struggled after, in vain. He is by nature born in sin, and consequently the child of wrath; and he needs a new birth unto righteousness, that he may become the child of God. He needs a destruction of the old Adam, of the body of original death, and thereby a restoration to the light of God's countenance. What has made him hateful to Infinite Purity, what exposes him to death eternal, is disobedience; take away that disobedience, and you take away guilt, peril, misery, all that needs taking away; and in proportion as you get rid of the one, you are rid of the other. This then is really our one burden; not merely a sense of guilt, or guilt itself, but that which is the cause both of guilt and the sense of guilt. Man did not become guilty except by becoming sinful; he does not become innocent except by becoming holy. God cannot, from His very nature, look with pleasure and favour upon an unholy creature, or justify or count righteous one who is not so. Cleanness of heart and spirit, obedience by word and deed, this alone in us can be acceptable to God; that is, this alone can

constitute our justification. And as certain is it, we cannot acquire it for ourselves; but, if it be ours, it must come from God only. The one thing we need is the ability to please God, or to be righteous; and it is God's gift. As such, good men have at all times sought it; as such, it was promised under the Law; and as such it is possessed by the regenerate under the Gospel.

Till the Gospel came, with its manifold gifts of grace, there was a contrariety and enmity between the Divine Law and the heart of man: they confronted each other, the one all light, the other all corruption. They ran parallel to each other, not converging; the Law detecting, condemning, terrifying, not influencing except for the worse; the human heart secretly acquiescing, but not loving, not obeying. In consequence we were unable to *please* God by what we did, or were unrighteous; for by righteousness is meant *acceptable obedience*. We needed then a justification, or making righteous; and this might become ours in two ways, either by dispensing with that exact obedience which the Law required, or by enabling us to fulfil it. In either, but in no other conceivable way, could our obedience, which by nature is displeasing, become pleasing to God, our unrighteousness become righteousness. Now, according to the doctrine I am engaged in expounding, the remedy lies in the latter alternative only; not in lowering the Law, much less in abolishing it, but in bringing up our

hearts to it; in preserving, in raising *its* standard, and in refashioning *them*, and so (as it were) at-tuning them to its high harmonies. As regards the past indeed, since it cannot literally be undone, a dispensation or pardon is all that can be given us; but for the present and future, if a gift is to be vouchsafed us, and we may anticipate what it should be, *this* is what we have to pray for,—not to have the Holy Law taken away, not to be merely accounted to have done what we have not done, not a nominal change, a nominal righteousness, an external blessing, but one penetrating inwards into our heart and spirit, joints and marrow, pervading us with a real efficacy, and wrapping us round in its fulness; not a change merely in God's dealings towards us, like the pale and wan sunshine of a winter's day, but (if we may seek it) the possession of Himself, of His substantial grace to touch and heal the root of the evil, the fountain of our misery, our bitter heart and its inbred corruption. As we can conceive God blessing nothing but what is holy, so all our notions of blessing center in holiness as a necessary foundation. He may bless, He may curse, according to His mercy or our deserts; but if He blesses, surely it is by making holy; if He counts righteous, it is by making righteous; if He justifies, it is by renewing; if He reconciles us to Him, it is not by annihilating the Law, but by creating in us new wills and new powers for the observance of it <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Lex ergo data est, ut gratia quæreretur; gratia data est

Nature then desires, whether it be granted or not, that that Law which we behold without us should be set up within us; that an inward power should be imparted to us, enabling us to please God or be justified, and converting that which is by nature an occasion of condemnation into an instrument of acceptance. Of course, even though we did all that it commanded, we should after all be but unprofitable servants, and could claim nothing on the score of merit; but, since the Great Creator deigns to accept the service of His creatures, we should, as meeting His demands, be pleasing Him by our obedience. In the same sense then in which it can be said that God is *glorified* by our obedience, though His perfection is infinitely above the need of it, so can it be said that we are *justified* by our obedience, though His favour is infinitely beyond the value of it. And this great blessing, it is maintained, really is bestowed on us in the Gospel; which, by the gift of the Holy Ghost, works in us a new and spiritual life such as, at once glorifies God before His creatures, and justifies us before Himself<sup>1</sup>.

*ut lex impleatur.* Neque enim suo vitio non implebatur lex, sed vitio prudentiæ carnis; quod vitium per legem demonstrandum, per gratiam sanandum fuit. . . . Propter veteris hominis noxam quæ per literam jubentem et minantem minime sanabatur, dicitur illud testamentum vetus; hoc autem novum propter novitatem spiritus quæ hominem novum sanat a vitio vetustatis. . . . August. de Spir. et Lit. 34. 35.

<sup>1</sup> Quæ [mandata] ut possit homo facere, *Deus operatur in homine* per fidem Jesu Christi, qui finis est ad *justitiam* omni

And that this will be the privilege of Saints hereafter, as of the Angels now, is, I suppose, allowed on all hands; the characteristic of this doctrine, as distinct from that of Lutherans and other Protestants, being that it conceives that in the sense in which God's grace enables us to glorify God at present, in the same it enables us to please God or become just at present; for no obedience can honour Him in the sight of His creatures, except such as makes us pleasant in His own sight.

Justification then viewed relatively to the past is forgiveness of sin, for nothing more it can be; but considered as to the present and future it is more, it is renewal wrought in us by the Spirit of Him, who withal by His death and passion washes away its still adhering imperfections, as well as blots out what is past. And Faith is said to justify in two principal ways:—first, as continually pleading that Passion before God, and secondly, as being the first recipient of the Spirit, the root, and therefore the earnest and anticipation of perfect obedience<sup>1</sup>.

credenti, id est, cui per *Spiritum* incorporatus factusque membrum ejus, potest quisque, illo incrementum *intrinsecus* dante, *operari justitiam*. August. de Spir. et Lit. 50.

<sup>1</sup> Ideo quippe proponitur justitia legis, quod qui fecerit eam, vivet in illa, ut cum quisque infirmitatem suam cognoverit, non per suas vires, neque per literam ipsius legis, quod fieri non potest, sed *per fidem* concilians *Justificatorem* perveniat et *faciat et vivat in eâ*. Opus enim quod fecerit, vivat in eo, non fit nisi a justificato. Justificatio autem ex fide impetratur, de qua scriptum est, 'Nę dixeris in cordibus,' &c. [Rom. x. 6.] In tantum

Now for the truth of these representations we are referred to Scripture, and that not to one or two texts only, detached from their context, but to an extended survey into the inspired word in both Testaments. Scripture in its various portions conspires together as a whole to this simple doctrine. From first to last what the Psalmist longs after, and Prophets promise, and Apostles announce as given by Almighty God, is one and the same, the capacity of serving God acceptably, or the gift of righteousness, not a shadow but a substance, not a name but a power, not an imputation but an inward work.

1. First, appeal is made to the book of Psalms; which, it is said, whether in the way of aspiration, prayer, or prophecy, so clearly assigns to the Evangelical Covenant the gift of *inwardly* justifying, that we may as well maintain that that Covenant has not been made, as that inward justification is not accorded. This actual inherent righteousness is the one main thought of the Psalms, not of

justus, in quantum salvus. . . . *Fide* igitur Jesu Christi impetramur salutem, et quantum nobis *inchoatur in re*, et quantum perficienda expectatur in spe . . . . Per fidem confugiat [anima] ad misericordiam Dei, *ut det quod jubet*, atque *inspirata gratiæ suavitate per Spiritum Sanctum* faciat plus delectare quod *præcipit* quam delectat quod impedit. Ita multa multitudo dulcedinis ejus, hoc est, *lex fidei, caritas ejus* conscripta in cordibus atque diffusa, perficitur sperantibus in eum, ut anima sancta non timore pœnæ, sed *amore justitiæ* operetur bonum. August. de Spir. et Lit. 51.



course to the exclusion of other blessings, but as the center and scope of them all. Let us take, for instance, the 119th Psalm, which may be considered as the standing prayer of the Church Militant in every age, as of old time for things longed for, so now for things pledged to it. Now one great gift is there contemplated again and again, in various forms, and that is nothing short of renovation of mind, the power to obey God, His quickening, illuminating, cleansing, comforting "Word," (as it is there called), or "Truth," or "Law," or "Judgments," or (as the Latin version speaks) "Justifications." "O that my ways were made so direct that I might keep Thy statutes! Thy words have I hid within my heart, that I should not sin against Thee. My soul cleaveth to the dust, O quicken Thou me according to Thy word. Quicken Thou me in Thy way; stablish Thy word in Thy servant, that I may fear Thee; quicken me in Thy righteousness: Thy word hath quickened me; my eyes long sore for Thy word, saying, O when wilt Thou comfort me? Thy word endureth for ever in heaven. I will never forget Thy commandments, for with them Thou hast quickened me; O how sweet are Thy words unto my throat; my eyes are wasted away with looking for Thy health, and for the word of Thy righteousness; when Thy word goeth forth, it giveth light and understanding unto the simple; I opened my mouth and drew in my breath, for my delight was in Thy commandments. Thy righteous-

ness is an everlasting righteousness, and Thy law is the truth; my heart standeth in awe of Thy word<sup>1</sup>.”

In these passages “Righteousness” is sought after by name; in such as the following it is promised or anticipated; and still inward holiness is the heavenly gift which is spoken of. “Thou, Lord, wilt give Thy blessing unto the righteous, and with Thy favourable kindness wilt Thou defend him as with a shield.” “The Lord alloweth the righteous.” “The righteous Lord loveth righteousness; His countenance will behold the thing that is just.” “God is in the generation of the righteous.” “Who shall dwell in Thy tabernacle? even he that leadeth an uncorrupt life.” “Be Thou my judge, O Lord, for I have walked innocently. Do well, O Lord, unto those who are good and true of heart.” “Offer the sacrifice of righteousness, and put your trust in the Lord. Give sentence with me, O God, according to my righteousness, and according to the innocency that is in me. O let the wickedness of the ungodly come to an end, but guide Thou the just. For the righteous God trieth the very hearts and reins<sup>2</sup>.” The sacred writer is not satisfied with an external or nominal righteousness, but he feels a want within, and he

<sup>1</sup> Ps. cxiv. 6. 11. 25. 37, 38, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. iv. 5; v. 13; vii. 8—16; xi. 6. 8; xiv. 9; xv. 1, 2; xxvi. 1; cxxv. 4.

prays for what he knows to be the very substance of religion.

If it be objected that such passages only show that obedience is *necessary* for God's favour, which no one denies, and that therefore an accumulation of them, however great, is nothing to the purpose, it may be replied, that on the contrary it is every thing; that, as one such text would show that obedience was *a* condition of God's favour, so these multiplied statements show that it is the one condition, the one thing in us which involves acceptance on God's part, that one requisite in naming which all we need is named. It is usual at the present day to lay great stress on the *distinction* between deliverance from guilt and deliverance from sin; to lay down as a first principle that these are two coincident indeed and contemporary, but altogether independent benefits, to call them justification and renewal, and to consider that any confusion between them argues serious and alarming ignorance of Christian truth. Now, in opposition to this, it may surely be maintained that Scripture itself blends them together as intimately as any system of theology can do; and that such a system is not thereby dark and ignorant unless Scripture is also. In truth, Scripture speaks of but one gift, which it sometimes calls renewal, sometimes justification, according as it views it,—passing to and fro from one to the other so rapidly, so abruptly, as to force upon us irresistibly the inference, that they *are* really one.

In other words, I would say, that this distinction, so carefully made at present, is not scriptural.

This shall first be shown from the Psalms; for instance, the 51st. That this is an evangelical Psalm in the fullest sense no one can doubt. It is David's prayer for restoration to God's favour after his grievous fall. It contains in it the two ideas in question, of deliverance from guilt and deliverance from sin; but does it accurately distinguish between them? So far from it, as to make it impossible to doubt, that in the mind of the inspired writer the one benefit immediately involved the other as part of it, that renewal involved external justification or God's favour, or that God's favour was given through renewal. For instance, which benefit does he speak of when he says, "*Wash* me throughly from my wickedness, and *cleanse* me from my sin?" If we judge by a subsequent verse, "Thou shalt purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean," we shall say he must mean renewal by "washing;" but if so, observe how the foregoing verse connects with it—"Have *mercy* upon me, O God, . . . *do away* mine offences, wash me." He says not, "*Both* have mercy *and* renew," contemplating two gifts, but "show mercy by renewing me." Again, "Thou shall *wash* me, and I shall be whiter than snow; Thou shall make me hear of *joy* and gladness." What then? does joy follow from sanctification? The popular doctrine at present connects it rigidly with justification; as if *immediately upon* justification, and *before* sanctifica-

tion, "joy and peace in believing" ensued. I really do not understand how a man can read this most important Psalm without perceiving (though I know many do not perceive it), that we are forgiven *by being*, or *while we are* renewed, and that the present broad separation of justification and sanctification, as if they were two gifts, is technical and unscriptural.

2. Now let us proceed to the Prophets, who promise the blessings which the Psalms pray for. It is needless to observe that they name "Righteousness" continually as the great gift of the New Covenant, and the fruit of Christ's earthly ministry. What then is this Righteousness which is bestowed on us? a mere external gift, a nominal qualification for heaven? is it the virtue of Christ's incarnation and sufferings, not imparted to the soul, but imputed merely? Let us turn to a passage from the Prophet Isaiah for an answer. "A *Law* shall proceed from Me, and I will make My judgment to rest for a *light* of the people. My Righteousness is near, My salvation is gone forth, and Mine arms shall judge the people; the isles shall wait upon Me, and on Mine arm shall they trust." Now the Righteousness or salvation promised was to be a *Law* and a *light*; how can the personal obedience which Christ wrought in the days of His flesh, by being counted as ours in God's sight, become a *Law* and a *Light*? but what follows makes this still clearer. "Hearken unto Me, *ye that know righteousness*, the people in whose

*heart is My Law.*" Righteousness then is a *Law in the heart*, and those who think otherwise do not, in the Prophet's words, "*know righteousness.*"

Again, the 35th chapter of the same Prophet might be quoted at length, as showing that the characteristic gift of the Gospel is more than the mere name of being what our Saviour really is, righteous. "*Then,*" says the Prophet, "the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped . . . An highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called *The way of holiness*; the unclean shall not pass over it." Again in the 26th chapter, which also is a prophecy of the Christian Church, "The way of the just is uprightness; Thou, most upright, dost weigh the path of the just. Yea, in the way of Thy judgments, O Lord, have we waited for Thee . . . Lord, Thou will ordain peace for us, *for Thou also hast wrought all our works in us.*" Peace is made to depend on an internal work.

If it be said that there is no lack of passages in the Psalms and Prophets which speak of forgiveness as the gift of the Gospel, as David's words, "Blessed is he whose unrighteousness is forgiven," and Isaiah's, "The Lord hath sent Me to bind up the broken-hearted<sup>1</sup>," this may be freely granted. All that is here maintained is, that the gift relates not only to the past but to the present, not only to what is without, but to what is within; that in its fulness, in its

<sup>1</sup> Psalm xxxii. 1. Isaiah lxi. 1.

essential character, it is not pardon merely but righteousness, not merely righteousness in name but in deed and in truth.

For instance, let us take the passage from the prophet Jeremiah, which St. Paul singles out more than once as being, what it is in its very wording, the formal announcement, or (as it were) the charter of the New Covenant. "This is the Covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord; I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them, and their sins and iniquities will I remember no more<sup>1</sup>." It is plain from this passage, that the *direct* promise of the Gospel, the clear intelligible view which meets us here, as in Isaiah, is a renovation of our nature, in which pardon is involved as an essential part, but only a part, of the free gift.

3. Let us now, without leaving the Old Testament, turn to the Epistles of St. Paul, of whose doctrine the passage just referred to will prove to be but an ordinary specimen. St. Paul again and again speaks of justification as coming to us, not from

<sup>1</sup> Heb. x. 16, 17.

Quid sunt ergo leges Dei ab ipso Deo scriptæ in cordibus nisi ipsa præsentia Spiritus sancti, qui est digitus Dei, quo præsentia diffunditur caritas in cordibus nostris quæ *plenitudo legis* est et *præcepti finis* . . . Dicitur, "Dabo leges meas," &c. unde significavit eos non forinsecus terrentem legem formidaturos, sed *intrinsicus habitantem ipsam legis justitiam* dilecturos. August. de Spir. et Lit. 36.

without but from within; from God indeed as an origin, but through our own hearts and minds, wills and powers. He attributes it to the influences of the Spirit working in us, and enabling us to perform that obedience to the Law towards which by ourselves we could not take a single step. For instance, he describes the natural man after David's manner, as "born in sin and shapen in iniquity," as "brought into captivity," as having "a *law* of sin in his members," and bearing about with him "a body of death." And then he thanks God that in Christ he is *delivered* from this bondage; but how? by "the law of *the Spirit of life* making him free from the law of *sin and death*." "For," he continues, "what the Law," that is the External Law, "could not do, in *that it was weak through* the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh, that the *righteousness* of the Law might be fulfilled *in us*," not independent of us, but in us, "who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit<sup>1</sup>." Can words be stronger to prove that the righteousness of the Law is not abolished under the Gospel, is not fulfilled by Christ only, but by Him as the first fruits of many brethren, by us in our degree after Him, that is, by Him in us, tending day by day towards that perfection which He manifested from the first? Can words more conclusively show that Gospel righteousness is obe-

<sup>1</sup> Rom. viii. 1—4.



dience to the Law of God, wrought in us by the Holy Ghost? Can we desire a more exact counterpart to the language already pointed out of the Psalms and Prophets? Even if we could otherwise interpret St. Paul's language, which we cannot fairly, shall we be inconsistent enough to give one meaning to the word "*righteousness*" in the prayer of the Saints, another in the answer to them? one meaning to it in the Prophecy, another in the fulfilment? Shall we explain away the Apostle's language, of which "prophets and kings" had fixed the interpretation, and make the Epistles say the less, and the Psalms say the more.

Again, to the Corinthians: "Ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but *with the Spirit of the Living God*, not on *tables* of stone, but in fleshly tables of the *heart*." God "hath enabled us to be ministers of the New Covenant; *not of the Letter, but of the Spirit*; for the *Letter killeth*, but the *Spirit giveth Life*<sup>1</sup>." Can words be clearer to show that, as the Letter or External Law is that which condemns us to death, so the Spirit, that is the Law written on the heart, or spiritual renovation, is that which *justifies us*? Surely, if we may deny the Spirit

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 3—6. *Lex Dei non ex omni parte deleta per injustitiam, profecto scribitur renovata per gratiam. Nec istam inscriptionem, quæ justificatio est, poterat efficere in Judæis lex in tabulis scripta, sed solum prævaricationem. August. de Spir. et Lit. 48.*

justifies, we may, for all St. Paul says, deny the Law condemns. But he continues more plainly: "But if the ministration of death" (or external Law) "was glorious . . . how shall not the Ministration of the Spirit be rather glorious? for if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the Ministration of Righteousness exceed in glory." Is it not almost too clear to insist upon that what is first called the ministration of the Spirit, is next called the ministration of righteousness; or, in other words, that the Spirit ministers righteousness, that is justifies? to say, as some do, that righteousness here means mere sanctification, is a gratuitous statement to avoid a difficulty; and being so very gratuitous, shows how great the difficulty is.

But this passage leads to a further remark; in it the tables of the Decalogue is alluded to. No one can doubt that the giving of the Ten Commandments from Mount Sinai was the ministration of *condemnation*; the corresponding event then to this in the Gospel Dispensation would seem to be the ministration of *righteousness*, or justification. Now what is it? What season in the history of the Gospel answers to the Feast of Weeks on which the giving of the Law was commemorated? The day of our Lord's Crucifixion? no; the day of Pentecost; but

<sup>1</sup> Novi Testamenti, ministrationem Spiritus et ministrationem justitiæ dicit, quia per *donum Spiritus operamur justitiam*, et a *prævaricationis damnatione* liberamur. August. de Spir. et Lit. 31.

what was the great event at Pentecost? The coming of the Holy Ghost, to write the divine Law in our hearts: that Law then so implanted is our justification<sup>1</sup>.

It accords with this view of the subject that justification, or the imparting of righteousness, is not unfrequently mentioned as an act subsequent to our Lord's Resurrection, and therefore, according to the analogy of faith, more naturally connected with the Holy Ghost. For instance: "who" (our Lord) "was delivered for our offences, and was *raised again for our justification*"<sup>2</sup>. Again, in another Epistle, the Apostle says, "If Christ be not *raised*, your faith is vain; *ye are yet in your sins*;" for how was Christ's resurrection deliverance from sin and justification, except as issuing in the mission of the Holy Ghost? And so in the Psalms: "Truth shall flourish out of the earth," Christ shall be raised in human nature, "and *righteousness hath looked down from heaven*," that is, the Spirit shall descend, as our Homily explains it<sup>3</sup>: and in Hosea, "Sow to your-

<sup>1</sup> Ibi populos accedere ad locum ubi Lex dabatur, horrendo terrore prohibetur; hic autem in eos supervenit Spiritus sanctus, qui cum promissum expectantes in unum fuerant congregati. Ibi in tabulis lapideis digitus Dei operatus est; hic in cordibus hominum. Ibi ergo Lex intrinsecus posita est, qua injusti terrentur; *hic intrinsecus data est, qua justificarentur.* August. de Spir. et Lit. 29.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. iv. 25; 1 Cor. xv. 17; Ps. lxxxv. 11; Hos. x. 12; Ps. lxxviii. 18, 19. 35.

<sup>3</sup> Sermon of the Resurrection.

selves in *righteousness*, reap in *mercy*." Here, without going further, is the doctrine of justifying obedience; but in what follows the gift of the Spirit is more distinctly implied; "Break up your fallow ground, for it is time to seek the Lord, till He come and *rain righteousness upon you*." With which may be compared the words of the Psalmist, "Thou art gone up on high, Thou hast led captivity captive, and *received gifts* for men: yea, even for their enemies, *that the Lord God might dwell among them*. Praised be the Lord daily, even the God who helpeth us and poureth His benefits upon us . . . He will give *strength and power* unto His people; blessed be God." Is not justification a gift? therefore it must be comprised in this mission of the Spirit. With these texts let such passages of Scripture be compared as the Hymn of Zacharias, in which the inspired speaker blesses God for having "visited and redeemed His people, *as He spake by the mouth of His holy prophets*, which have been since the world began<sup>1</sup>; to perform the *mercy promised*," —"His holy covenant," and His "oath;" and then goes on to describe the benefit to consist in our "serving Him without fear, in *holiness and righteousness*, before Him all the days of our life." Presently "the remission of sins" is mentioned, as if incidentally; which brings out still more strongly the meaning of the portion I have quoted, viz. that

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 63—77.

renovation is the real gift of the Gospel, and justification is implied or involved in it.

This correspondence between the giving of the Law on Sinai, and the coming of the Spirit at Pentecost, has been mentioned as conducing to the proof of the latter being our justification, as the former is our condemnation; a similar contrast is observed in Scripture between the *rites* of the Law and the *influences* of the Spirit<sup>1</sup>. The Jews thought to be justified by *circumcision*; St. Paul replies, circumcision in the flesh is nothing, but *spiritual circumcision*, or renewal of heart, is all in all. Does not this imply that the renewal through the Spirit really effects what the Jewish rites attempted but in vain, justification? For instance, St. Paul says: "He is not a Jew which is one outwardly, neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh; but he is a Jew which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the Spirit, not in the letter; whose *praise* is not of men, but of God<sup>2</sup>." What can God's praise mean but justification<sup>3</sup>? To the same purport are the following passages: "In Christ Jesus neither *circumcision* availeth any thing nor uncircumcision, but a *new creature*; and as many as *walk* according to this *rule*, peace be on

<sup>1</sup> August. Ep. ad Asell. 196. Serm. 169. vid. also Bull. Harm. ii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. ii. 28, 29.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. 1 Cor. iv. 4 with 5; Luke xviii. 14, with Matt. xxv. 21; 1 Thess. ii. 4.

them and *mercy*," (and forgiveness, surely,) "and upon the Israel of God<sup>1</sup>." And the other two parallel texts, "In Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith *which worketh by love*;" and "Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but *the keeping of the commandments of God*."

To the same purport too is our Lord's warning: "Except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven." No one can doubt that an inward righteousness is here intended; that it is such as to introduce us into the kingdom of heaven; that it is that in substance which the Pharisees had only in pretence. The same doctrine is implied also in St. Paul's avowal, that he stands, "not having his own righteousness, *which is of the Law*, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith<sup>2</sup>." If *legal* righteousness is of a moral nature, why should not the righteousness of faith be moral also<sup>3</sup>?

The same explanation applies to other passages of St. Paul, the force of which is often overlooked at

<sup>1</sup> Gal. vi. 15; iv. 6. 1 Cor. vii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. v. 20; Phil. iii. 9.

<sup>3</sup> Qui enim crediderit in eum, non habebit suam justitiam, quæ ex Lege est, quamvis sit bona Lex, sed *implebit ipsam legem*, non sua justitia sed data ex Deo. Ita enim non confundetur. *Caritas enim est Legis plenitudo*. Et unde ista caritas diffusa est in cordibus nostris? Non utique a nobis, sed *per Spiritum Sanctum* qui datus est nobis. August. Serm. 169.

the present day. For instance: "By the deeds of the Law," that is, by a conformity to the external Law, "there shall no flesh be justified in His sight; for by the Law is the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God," (that is the new righteousness, introduced and wrought upon the heart by the "ministration of the Spirit,") "without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets, even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe . . . whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in His blood, for the setting forth of His righteousness,"—a righteousness of His making, "on account of the remission of past sins, . . . that He might be just, and the justifier of Him which believeth in Jesus<sup>1</sup>;" that is, that He who is

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iii. 20—26. 'Justitia,' inquit, 'Dei manifestata est.' Non dixit, justitia hominis, vel justitia propriæ voluntatis, sed 'justitia Dei,' non qua Deus justus est, sed qua induit hominem cum justificat impium. Hæc testificatur per Legem et Prophetas; huic quippe testimonium perhibent Lex et Prophetæ. Lex quidem hoc ipso quod jubendo et minando, et neminem justificando satis indicat, *dono Dei justificari hominem per adjutorium Spiritus*: Prophetæ autem, quia id quod prædixerunt, Christi implevit adventus. . . . Justitia Dei sine Lege est quam Deus *per Spiritum gratiæ* credenti confert *sine adjutorio* Legis, hoc est non adjuto a Lege . . . Voluntas nostra ostenditur infirma per Legem, ut sanet gratia voluntatem, et sancta voluntas *impleat Legem*, non constituta sub Lege, nec indigens Lege. August. de Spir. et Lit. 15. It must be borne in mind all along that St. Austin is arguing with the Pelagians, who said we could be justified by the Law in our natural state. 'No,'

righteousness in Himself, may also be a source of righteousness in all who believe.

Again, he says, in another Epistle, "By grace are ye saved through faith, and that not of yourselves, it is the *gift* of God," the great gift, even that of the Spirit; "not of works," done by your unaided strength, in conformity to the natural Law, "lest any man should boast; for we are His workmanship;" He has made us a new creation, "created in Christ Jesus unto good works." Here the difference is marked between the works of the Spirit, which are "good," and those of the Law, which are worthless.

Once more: "Not by works of righteousness which we have done;" for we have none such to produce; all our works done in the flesh are but hateful to God; "but according to His mercy He saved us *by the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost*, which He shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour; that being *justified by His grace*, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life<sup>1</sup>." And then, as before, the Apostle proceeds to speak of the necessity of those who have gained this mercy, excelling in "*good works*."

Such is St. Paul's testimony to the life-giving and justifying nature of the New Law; which, unlike

he answers, 'we are justified only by the Spirit enabling us to fulfil the Law.' This consideration makes the argument derived from his statements stronger.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iii; Eph. ii. 8—10; Tit. iii. 5—8. Cf. Gal. v. 18. &c.



the External Law, is not only perfect in itself and a standard of truth, but influential also, creative as well as living, "powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword;" or, in David's words, "perfect, *converting* the soul<sup>1</sup>;" or, as St. James calls it, "the word of truth" through which we are begotten, "the engrafted word which is able to save our souls." Accordingly, the last-mentioned Apostle also calls it "a royal Law," and "a Law of Liberty;" by which he seems to mean, that it is not an outward yoke, but an inward principle, a brighter and better conscience, so far as we have succeeded in realizing our evangelical state; a law indeed, but in the same general sense in which we speak of its being a law of the mind to rejoice in, love or desire certain objects. It is henceforth the *nature* of the mind to love God; the Law of God is not a master; it is ourselves, it is our will. Hence St. Paul says, "Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is *liberty*;" and elsewhere he says that "the Law is not made for a righteous man," not made for him, because he *is* the Law<sup>2</sup>; he needs not a Law to force him externally who has the law in his heart, and acts "not

<sup>1</sup> Heb. iv. 12. Ps. xix. 7. James i. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Sub Lege . . . vivit, in quantum quisque peccator est; id est, in quantum a vetere homine non est mutatus. Sua enim vita vivit, et ideo Lex supra illum est; quia qui eam non implet, infra illum est. Nam justo Lex posita non est, id est imposita, ut supra illam sit; in illa est enim potius quam sub illa. August. in Gal. ii. § 17.

by constraint, but willingly," "not grudgingly, or of necessity," but from love.

And hence, moreover, it is that love is said to be the fulfilling of the Law, or righteousness; because being the one inward principle of life adequate, in its fulness, to meet and embrace the range of duties which externally confront it, it is, in fact, nothing else but the energy and the representative of the Spirit in our hearts. Accordingly, St. Paul, describing the course of sanctification, begins it in faith but finishes it in love; "Faith, hope, charity," he says, "these three." Again, "The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost, which is given us." Again, "the end of the commandment is love out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned."<sup>1</sup> And St. John, in like manner, "He that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him." Love, then, being the perfection of religion, and Love being the fulfilling of the Law, to fulfil the Law is the summit of evangelical blessedness<sup>2</sup>.

Again, justification, as all allow, and as has been assumed throughout, is a state in which we are acceptable and pleasing to God; according then to the mode in which we please God, is the mode of our justification. Now it is plain, from St. Paul,

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiii. 13. Rom. v. 5. 1 Tim. i. 5. 1 John iv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Caritas ergo inchoata, inchoata justitia est; caritas profecta, profecta justitia est; caritas magna, magna justitia est; caritas perfecta, perfecta justitia est. August. de Nat. et Grat. 84.

that the regenerate please God, not merely by the imputation of Christ's obedience, but by their own obedience: by their obedience therefore are they justified. If they were justified only by imputation of Christ's obedience, they could only please Him by that obedience; but so far as they are allowed to please Him, so far may they be said to justify themselves. For instance, St. Paul says, "The God of grace . . . making you perfect in every good work to do His will, *working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight*, through Jesus Christ," not imputing to you what is pleasing. Christ then does not keep the power of justification solely in His own hands, but by His Spirit dispenses it to us in due measure, through the medium of our own doings. He has imparted to us the capacity of pleasing Him; and to please Him is that in part, which justification is in fulness, and tends towards justification as its limit. That this power is the characteristic of the Gospel is evident from St. Paul's words elsewhere, "they that are in the flesh cannot please God; but ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit<sup>1</sup>."

Parallel with such texts is that in the Epistle to the Philippians, on which much might be said: "Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God who worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure." Salvation is here described, as justification elsewhere, not as

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xiii. 21; Rom. viii. 8. 9.

coming direct from God upon us, but as coming to us through ourselves, through our sanctified wills and doings; as wrought out for us by the power of God actively employed within us."

Texts which speak of our receiving a reward for our obedience, enforce the same conclusion still more strongly. For what is the reward of a religious action, but God's favour, accorded to us in consequence of good things wrought in us by the Holy Spirit?

Lastly, a number of passages may be referred to, which have a peculiar cogency, as flowing spontaneously, as it would seem, from the inspired speakers and writers, and so showing the genius of the evangelical system. As when our Lord says, "Rather give alms of such things as ye have; and behold all things are clean unto you." "Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness." "This do," that is, the Commandments, "and thou shalt live. "Fear God, and keep His commandments, for this is the all in all of man." "Not the hearers of the Law are just before God, but the doers of the Law shall be justified." "If we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin." "Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life<sup>1</sup>." "By works a man is justified, and

<sup>1</sup> Luke xi. 41; xvi. 9; x. 27; Eccles. xii. 13; Rom. ii. 13; 1 John i. 7; Rev. xxii; James ii. 24; Matt. xxv. 31, &c.

not by faith only." And, above all, perhaps our Lord's declaration that the "righteousness" wherein we must stand at the last day, is not His own imputed obedience, but our good works.

Such is the doctrine concerning our justification, which has the testimony of the whole Christian Church in its favour, and which, I suppose, all sober minds would admit at once, except from some notion that it contradicts our Articles. What our Articles add in it, and in what respect it is defective, and how it may be unscripturally used, shall be considered hereafter; here I will but say this, that at any rate it is what the rival doctrine is not, a real doctrine, and contains an intelligible, tangible, practical view which one can take and use. That the scheme of salvation should be one of names and understandings; that we should be but said to be just, said to have a righteousness, said to please God, said to earn a reward, said to be saved by works; that the great disease of our nature should remain unstaunched; that Adam's old sinfulness should so pervade the regenerate that they can do nothing good and acceptable, even when it is sprinkled with Christ's blood,—all this would of course be matter of faith, if Scripture declared it; but when merely propounded fifteen centuries after Christ came, it has no claims upon us, and might be rejected, even if it were not so alien, as it is, to the genius of the Evangelical Covenant. That Covenant is a substance; in the words of the text, "the *body* is of Christ;"

Judaism was the time of shadows; it was Judaism which contained but the profession, the appearance of great things, exciting hopes which it could not gratify, and seeming to promise when it did but enforce the need. When then divines, however great, "who seem to be pillars," come to me with their visionary system, an unreal righteousness and a real corruption, I answer, that the Law is past, and that I will not be brought into bondage by shadows. "Shadows of religion," (to use an expression of one of our own great Bishops<sup>1</sup>;) these things fitly may be called; like the Jewish new-moons and sabbaths which the Judaizers were so loth to part with. Reputed justification was the gift of the Law; but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. Away then with this modern, this private, this arbitrary, this tyrannical system, which promising liberty conspires against it; which abolishes Sacraments to introduce barren and dead ordinances; and for the real participation of Christ, and justification through his Spirit, would, at the very marriage feast, feed us on shells and husks, who hunger and thirst after righteousness. It is a new gospel, unless three hundred years stands for eighteen hundred; and if one *must* at this day be seduced from the faith, let them look out for a more specious error, a more alluring sophism, a more angelic tempter than this. It is surely too bold an attempt to take from our hearts the power, the fulness, the mysterious pre-

<sup>1</sup> Bishop Wilson.—Family Prayers.

sence of Christ's most holy death and resurrection, and to soothe us for our loss with the name of having it.

Dismissing, however, a train of thought, which scarcely belongs to the present Lecture, I conclude by summing up the opposite characteristics of the two systems of doctrine, which have been under review, and of which Luther and St. Austin are the respective expounders.

The main point in dispute is this; whether or not the Moral Law can be fulfilled or satisfied by the regenerate. Augustine says, that whereas we are by nature condemned by the Law, the Spirit enables us to perform it unto our justification; Luther, that whereas we are condemned by it, Christ has Himself performed it unto our justification;—Augustine, that our righteousness is active; Luther, that it is passive<sup>1</sup>;—Augustine, that it is inherent; Luther, that it is imputed only;—Augustine, that it consists in a change of heart; Luther, in a change of state. Luther maintains that God's commandments are impossible to man<sup>2</sup>; Augustine adds, impossible without

<sup>1</sup> In Galat. Argum.

<sup>2</sup> Etsi igitur offenduntur viri politici, cum Lex Dei dicitur impossibilis, tamen id dictum verum est de hac corrupta natura. . . Ideo donat nobis Spiritum sanctum ut in trita infirmitate tamen inchoetur Lex. Melanchth. Loci. Theol. de Lib. Arb. Gerhard explains St. Austin's statements about grace enabling us to fulfil the Law, by understanding "grace," to mean *forgiveness*; or that we fulfil the Law by God's mercy not imputing to us our non-fulfilment. Gerh. de Lege Dei, § 196.

His grace<sup>1</sup>;—Luther, that the gospel consists of promises only<sup>2</sup>; Augustine, that it is also a Law;—Luther, that our highest wisdom is, not to know the Law<sup>3</sup>; Augustine says instead, to know and keep it;—Luther says, that the Law and Christ cannot dwell together in the heart<sup>4</sup>; Augustine says, that the Law *is* Christ;—Luther denies, and Augustine maintains that obedience is a matter of conscience<sup>5</sup>; Luther says, that a man is made a Christian not by working but by hearing<sup>6</sup>; Augustine excludes those works only which are done before grace given;—Luther, that our best deeds are sins<sup>7</sup>; Augustine, that they are really pleasing to God. Luther says, that faith is taken instead of righteousness; Augustine, in earnest of righteousness;—Luther, that faith is all in all, as being a substitute for the Law; Augustine, as being its commencement;—Luther says, that faith,

<sup>1</sup> Eo quippe ipso quo firmissime creditur, 'Deum justum et bonum impossibilia non potuisse præcipere,' hinc admonemur, et in facilibus quid agamus et in difficilibus quid petamus. Omnia quippe fiunt facilia caritati, &c. De Nat. et Grat. 83.

<sup>2</sup> Luther in Gal. iii. 11; f. 272. (2.) f. 274. f. 407. Bull. Harm. i. 3. § 3.

<sup>3</sup> In Gal. Argum.

<sup>4</sup> In Gal. v. 4. Discat igitur pius Legem et Christum duo contraria esse, prorsus incompatibilia. In iv. 3.

<sup>5</sup> Debemus extra conscientiam facere ex ea [Lege] Deum; in conscientia vero est vere diabolus. Quia in minima tentatione non potest erigere et consolari conscientiam, &c... Nullo modo sinamus eam dominari in conscientia. Luther in Gal. iv. 3.

<sup>6</sup> In Gal. iii. 2.

<sup>7</sup> He seems to have meant that they *had sin* in them; but his words are, Opus bonum optime factum est *mortale peccatum* secundum iudicium Dei.—Gerhard de Bon. Op. § 38.



as such, renews the heart; Augustine says, a loving faith;—Luther would call faith the tree, and works the fruit; Augustine, rather, the inward life or grace of God or love<sup>2</sup> the tree, and renewal the fruit. The school of Luther accuse their opponents of self-righteousness; and they retort on them the charge of self-indulgence: the one say that directly aiming at good works fosters pride; the other, that not doing so sanctions licentiousness.

Such are the two views of justification when placed in contrast with each other; and as so placed, I conceive, that as the former is a perversion of the truth, the latter comes short of it. What is wanting to complete it, we learn from other parts of St. Austin's writings, which supply what Luther, not finding in Rome, expressed in his own way. I say this, lest I should appear to be setting up any private judgment of my own against a Father of the Church, or to speak of him as I might speak of Luther<sup>2</sup>. St. Austin doubtless was but a fallible man, and, where he opposed the voice of the Catholic Church, is not to be followed; yet others may be more fallible than he; and when it is a difference of opinion between

<sup>1</sup> Non enim fructus est bonus, qui de caritatis radice non surgit. De Spir. et Lit. 26. On the other hand, Luther says, "Qui volet fructus bonos habere, ab arbore incipiat, et hanc bonam plantabit; ita qui vult bona operare, non ab operando, sed a credendo incipiat. De Libert. Christ. f. 8.

<sup>2</sup> It is but fair to Luther to say that he indirectly renounced the extravagant parts of his doctrine at the end of life; (that is, the distinctive parts. Vid. above, p. 10, note.) Laurence, Bampton Lectures, iv. Note 14.

one mind and another, the holy Austin will weigh more even with ordinarily humble men than their own thoughts. The Roman doctrine of justification is not complete, because St. Austin, and the other Fathers, go beyond it: the doctrine of the continental Protestants is extravagant, because the Fathers interpret Scripture otherwise. What the Romanists omit, St. Austin contains; but the Protestants in question distort it to the denial of other truth. St. Austin contemplates the whole of Scripture, and harmonizes it into one consistent doctrine; they, like the Arians, entrench themselves in a few favourite texts. Their great Masters, men of original minds, spoke as no one before them; St. Austin, with no less originality, was contented to minister to the promulgation of what he had received. They have been founders of schools; St. Austin is a Father in the Holy Apostolic Church.

## LECTURE III.

---

### PRIMARY SENSE OF THE WORD JUSTIFICATION.

---

PSALM xxix. 4.

“ The Voice of the Lord is mighty in operation ; the Voice of the Lord is a glorious Voice.”

ENOUGH has now been said to make it appear that the controversy concerning Justification, agitated in these last centuries, mainly turns upon this question, whether Christians are or are not justified by observance of the Moral Law. I mean, this has been in matter of fact the point in dispute ; whether, or how far it has been a dispute of words, or went to the root of the question doctrinally, or to the root of the difference between them ethically,—considerations which I do not now dwell upon, but mention by way of explaining my meaning. That in our *natural* state, and by *our own* strength, we are not and cannot be justified by obedience, is admitted on all hands, agreeably to St. Paul's forcible statements ; and to deny it is the heresy of Pelagius.

But it is a distinct question altogether, whether *with* the presence of God the Holy Ghost we can obey unto justification; and, while the received doctrine in all ages of the Church has been, that through the largeness and peculiarity of the gift of grace we can, it is the distinguishing tenet of the first Protestants, that through the incurable nature of our corruption we cannot. Or, what comes to the same thing, one side says that the righteousness in which God accepts us is inherent, wrought in us by the grace flowing from Christ's Atonement; the other says that it is external, reputed, nominal, being Christ's own sacred and most perfect obedience on earth, viewed by a merciful God as if it were ours. And issue is joined on the following question, whether justification means in Scripture *counting* us righteous, or *making* us righteous;—that is, as regards our *present* condition, for that pardon of *past* sins is included under its meaning both parties in the controversy allow.

Now, in the last Lecture, in which I stated what I consider as, *in the main*, the true doctrine, two points were proposed for proof: first, that justification and sanctification were substantially the same thing; next, that, viewed relatively to each other, justification *followed upon* sanctification. The former of these statements seems to me entirely borne out by Scripture; I mean, that justification and sanctification are there described as parts of one gift, properties, qualities, or aspects of one; that re-

newal cannot exist without acceptance, or acceptance without renewal ; that Faith, which is the symbol of the one, contains in it Love, which is the symbol of the other. So much concerning the former of the two statements ; but as to the latter, that justification *follows* upon sanctification, that we are first renewed, and then and therefore accepted, this doctrine, which Luther strenuously opposed, is true in one sense, but not true in another,—true in a *popular* sense, not true in an *exact* sense. Now, in the present Lecture, I propose to consider the exact and philosophical relation of justification to sanctification, in regard to which Luther seems to be in the right : in the next Lecture, the *popular* and *practical* relation of the one to the other, which St. Austin and other Fathers set forth : and in the Sixth and following, what has partly been the subject of the foregoing Lecture, the *real connexion* between the two, or rather *identity*, in matter of fact, however we may vary our terms, or classify our ideas.

If it be asked how I venture, as in the above avowal, to prefer Luther in any matter even of detail to St. Austin, I answer, that I believe St. Austin really connects justification and sanctification, *as* Luther would do, though with less of uniformity in expression, and no exaggeration, and a preference of practical to scientific statements. Nor is it in any way strange, supposing the two are really united in one subject, as its properties or qualities, as light and heat co-exist in the sun, that the same author

should in familiar language speak of the Sun of righteousness, both as shining on us, in order to warm us, and as shining on us with his genial warmth; justifying unto renewal, and justifying by renewing<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Neque tamen interea negandum est quin perpetuo conjunctæ sint ac cohæreant duæ istæ res, sanctificatio et justificatio: sed perperam inde infertur unam ac eandem esse; exempli gratia, solis lumen, etsi nunquam separatur a calore, non tamen calor existimandus est, nemoque tam rudis invenitur qui non unum ab altero distinguat. Calvin. Antid. p. 324. This then is the *extent* of the doctrinal error he opposes, the confessing indeed that the Sun of righteousness is both light and heat, but speaking of the *Sunshine warming* us. As to the *practical* corruptions of the Roman Catholics, that is another matter; here the question is about a certain *doctrine* held by them and others. E. g. compare the statement of the Bishop of Bitonto in the deliberations at Trent, which, as far as the present point, seems identical with Calvin's, except that he attributes *more* to justification, comparing it to the Sun's *presence*, not merely his heat: Bituntinus ita disputavit: Duo intervenire cum impius justitiam accipit, *liberationem ab injustitiæ statu* et justitiæ adeptionem: *illam huic antecedere*, intelligens, ut arbitror, eam quam antecessionem naturæ Scholæ nominant, perinde ac Solis adventus suæ lucis effusionem antecedit. Is itaque fortasse censuit per hujusmodi quam dicunt naturæ antecessionem *prius* condonari peccatum per divinam *extrinsecus* remissionem, tum vero, sed *eorum [eodem] temporis momento*, cessante in nobis peccati obice, gratiam infundi qua Dei filii constituimur. Hanc ipse aiebat, *antecedentem hujusmodi justificationem* ex eo haberi, quod *nobis imputetur Christi justitia*, qui veniam nobis impetrat; at subsequentem obtinet per justitiam interius nobis infusam, non autem per Christi justitiam nobis extrinsecus imputatam, quod Lutherani contendebant. Pallavicin. Hist. Conc. Trid. viii. 4. 14.

In adopting the middle course I have thus prescribed to myself, I am but following our Articles; which, in one place, speak of justification as synonymous with our being "*accounted* righteous before God;" following Luther: and in another as synonymous with "the *grace* of Christ and the *inspiration of His Spirit*," following St. Austin and other Fathers.

Now, to proceed to the subject of the present Lecture, that God justifies before He sanctifies; or that, in exact propriety of language, justification is *counting* righteous, not *making*. I would explain myself thus:—to "justify" means "counting righteous," but includes *under* its meaning "making righteous;" in other words, the sense of the *term* is "counting righteous," and the sense of the *thing* denoted by it is making righteous. In the abstract it is a counting righteous, in the concrete a making righteous. An illustration will clear my meaning. No one doubts what the word *Psalmist* means in Scripture; yet that one undeniable sense which it has, viewed in itself, is of course very far short of its full sense, when applied to this or that person. Then it stands for much more than this bare and abstract sense. A Psalmist is one who sings Psalms; but *the* Psalmist may be David, a given individual, living at a certain time and place, and with a certain history attached to him. The meaning of the name is one thing; of the object another. If one said, "the Psalmist wept over his son Absalom," it would be

absurd to maintain either that the *word* Psalmist meant "a Father," or that the *object* signified was merely "a singer of Psalms." So, again, a shepherd slew Goliath, but not *as* a shepherd; and the "man after God's own heart" numbered the people, yet not after God's heart. In like manner, justification, in the mere meaning of the word, may be a counting or declaring righteous, (as the 11th Article implies,) yet *the* justification given under the Gospel, the thing denoted by the word, may (as the 13th implies) be as much more than a mere external, reputed, conventional righteousness, as "the sweet Psalmist of Israel" was more than a Psalmist. It may be as true that it is *in fact* the giving of "the grace of Christ, and the inspiration of His Spirit," as that the Psalmist was also a king, the man after God's own heart, and a type of Christ. Justification, then, *as such*, is an imputation; but Gospel justification is more, it is renewal also.

I shall now offer remarks in behalf of three positions, which arise out of what has been said; first, that justification is, properly speaking, a *declaration* of righteousness; secondly, that it *precedes* renewal; thirdly, that it is the *means, instrument, or cause* of renewal. It is "the Voice of the Lord" *calling us*, calling us *what we are not* when it calls us, calling us *what we then begin to be*.

1. Justification is "the glorious Voice of the Lord" declaring us to be righteous. That it is a declaration, not a making, is sufficiently clear from



this one argument, that it is the justification of a *sinner*, of one who *has been* a sinner; and the past cannot be reversed except by *accounting* it reversed. Nothing can bring back time bygone; nothing can undo what is done. God treats us *as if* that had not been which has been; that is, by a merciful economy or representation, He says of us, as to the past, what in fact is otherwise. It is true that justification extends to the present as well as to the past; yet, if so, still it must mean an imputation or declaration, or it would cease to have respect to the past. And if it be once granted to mean an imputation, it cannot mean any thing else; for it cannot have two meanings at once. To account and to make are perfectly distinct ideas. The subject-matter may be double, but the act of justification is one; what it is as to the past, such must it be as to the present; it is a declaration about the past, it is a declaration about the present.

This being so clearly the case, it is scarcely necessary to quote passages from Scripture in proof; one or two shall be adduced by way of sanction.

For example; in the fourth chapter of his Epistle to the Romans, St. Paul makes justification synonymous with "*imputing* righteousness," and quotes David's words concerning the blessedness of those "whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered," and "to whom the Lord will not impute sin." Righteousness, then, is the name, character, or estimation of righteousness vouchsafed to the past,

and extending from the past to the present as far as the present is affected by the past. It is the accounting a person not to have that present guilt, peril, odiousness, ill-repute, with which the past burdens him. If a wrong has been done you, and you forgive the offender, you count it as though it had not been, you pass it over. You view him as before he did it, and treat him on his original footing. You consider him to have been what he has not been, fair and friendly towards you; that is, you impute righteousness to him or justify him. When a parent forgives a child, it is on the same principle. He says, "I will think no more of it this time; I will forget what has happened: I will give you one more trial." In this sense it is all one to say that he forgives the child, or that he counts him a good child, and treats him as if he had not been disobedient. He declares him dutiful; and thereby indirectly forgives his past self, which lives in his present self, and makes it a debtor.

Again: In the eighth chapter of the same Epistle, St. Paul says, "Who shall lay any thing to the *charge* of God's elect? It is God that justifieth<sup>1</sup>." Here *justification* is contrasted with *accusation*; accordingly it is a judicial word, and is, therefore, concerned with the past. It comes *upon* the past and takes up man in his natural state, as found a sinner. Whatever blessings besides are intended

<sup>1</sup> Rom. viii. 33.

for him, still it is the commencement of blessing, and if so, is necessarily, in the first place, a declaring, whatever it may do afterwards. It is, as being a judicial act, an act concerning the present as influenced by the past; they who *have* sinned *are* criminals, and they *are* justified from what they *have* been. Unless it can be shown, then, that courts of law *make* men innocent, instead of *declaring* them so, justification is a declaration, not a making.

Again, in the fifth chapter: "The judgment was by one to *condemnation*, but the free gift is of many offences unto *justification*. . . . As by the offence of one, judgment came upon all men to *condemnation*, even so by the righteousness of One the free gift came upon all men unto *justification* of life<sup>1</sup>." Now here it is objected by Romanists and others, that Adam's condemnation included an inward destitution, and therefore justification includes an inward gift. That, however, is a further question; whatever condemnation or justification may or may not *involve* or *imply*, the point before us is not this, but what the *word* means. A *declaration* on the part of God may in itself presuppose, or involve, or attend, or cause, or in any other way imply the actual communication of the thing declared; still it does not thereby cease to be a declaration, and justification need not cease to be in itself an accounting, though it may involve a making righteous.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. v. 16—18.

Condemnation, in like manner, though it implies, does not *mean* guilt surely, but what comes upon it; and so justification does not mean cleansing, even though it turn out to be the instrument or cause of it.

In like manner our Lord says to the Pharisees, "Ye are they which justify yourselves before men;" does this mean "make yourselves righteous," or merely "declare, profess yourselves" so?

These are one or two out of various passages from the New Testament, which show the sense in which the word justification is to be taken; indeed, but one passage can be produced where it is used for "making righteous," and there the reading is doubtful<sup>1</sup>. I mean St. John's words at the end of the Apocalypse, "He that is righteous, let him be righteous still;" which in the Greek runs, "let him be justified still."

There are many collateral arguments leading us to the same conclusion. For instance; St. James says, "that Abraham believed God, and it was *imputed* unto him for righteousness; and he was *called* the friend of God." No one can doubt that these phrases are synonymous with being justified; justification, then, is a "*calling*," that is, a declaring, accounting, treating as the friend of God. That he also *was* the friend of God, and well-pleasing to Him, is certain too; but his justification was his being *declared* so.

<sup>1</sup> Bull. Harm. i. 1. § 6.

Again; the Jews considered they were justified by the rites of the Law, such as circumcision, observing the Sabbath, paying tithes, and the like; and St. Paul says, "By the works of the Law shall no flesh be justified." Now, the Jews did not consider such works *made* them holy, but made them holy *towards God*, or *recommended* them to Him; and St. Paul condemns them for *substituting* them *for* holiness. The Apostle goes on to say, that the only true justification is the being *made* holy or renewed; does not this imply from the very nature of the case, that renewal was not just the same thing *as* justification, but that *in* which God justified, instead of justifying *in* the observance of rites? What the Jews thought justification through ceremonies to be, that gospel justification really is, acceptableness; and as the word was *attached* to circumcision among the Jews without being synonymous with it, so it attaches to renewal now, without standing for it, or being an equivalent expression.

The same distinction is seen in passages where mention is made of being "*counted* worthy of eternal life:"—for instance, when our Lord speaks of those "which shall be *accounted* worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead<sup>1</sup>;" or bids us watch and pray that we "may be *accounted* worthy to escape all these things which shall

<sup>1</sup> Luke xx. 35. and xxi. 36.

come to pass;" and when St. Paul speaks of our "being *counted* worthy of the kingdom of God <sup>1</sup>," no one can deny two things;—first, that those who are *counted* worthy, *are* worthy, (for our Lord says in the Apocalypse, "They shall walk with me in white, for they *are* worthy <sup>2</sup>;"") and next, that to be "counted worthy" does not *mean* to be worthy, though it implies it, but means a *declaration* of that which really *is*, in spite, (if one must so say, or rather as one would more reasonably think,) because of its being declared. In like manner, justification, as such, may be a *declaration*, though it involves in fact a *gift* of righteousness.

2. And, secondly, it not only declares, but it *precedes* the gift which it declares; it is the "Voice of the Lord," calling righteous what is not righteous, when He calls it so. This will appear from examining what justification is, as a real and gracious act on God's part towards us sinners. Now, the doctrine of our justification not only implies, but derives its special force from our being by birth sinners and culprits. It supposes a judicial process, that is, an accuser, a judgment seat, and a prisoner. Such is our condition by nature; the devil is our accuser, as of old time he accused Job; and the natural man, not being righteous as Job, has so much more cause for amazement and confusion. Yet even Job says, "Behold I am vile,

<sup>1</sup> 2 Thes. i. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. iii. 4.

what shall I answer Thee? *I will lay my hand upon my mouth.* Once have I spoken, but I will not answer; yea twice, but I will proceed no further." Or as Ezra speaks, "We are *ashamed and blush* to lift up our faces to God, for our iniquities are increased over our heads, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens<sup>1</sup>." If this be the case with holy men, what should it be with the world at large, when the heavy catalogue of their sins is spread out in the sight of Divine Holiness! Then, as St. Paul says, "*Every mouth is stopped*, and all the world is guilty before God." Under these circumstances, when there is no health or hope in us, when we hide our faces and are speechless, the All-merciful God, as we are taught in the Gospel, for Christ's sake, freely pardons and *justifies* us. He justifies instead of condemning; that is, He exalts us by how much we were overwhelmed and cast down, by a salvation as strange as the peril was imminent. This correspondence between the depth of our misery and our recovery, will enable us to estimate the wonderful character of the latter. It is an act as signal, as great, as complete, as was the condemnation into which sin plunged us. Whether or not it involves renewal, it is evidently something of a more formal and august nature than renewal. The word is one of state and solemnity. Divine Mercy might have renewed us and kept it secret;

<sup>1</sup> Job xl. 4, 5. Ezra ix. 6.

this would have been an infinite and most unmerited grace, but He has done more. He *justifies* us; He not only makes, He declares, acknowledges, accepts us as holy. He recognizes us as His own, and publicly repeals the sentence of wrath and penal statutes which lie against us. He sanctifies us gradually; but justification is a perfect act, realizing at once what sanctification does but tend towards. In it, the whole course of sanctification is anticipated, reckoned, or imputed to us in its very beginning. Before man has done any thing as specimen, or paid any thing as instalment, he has the whole treasures of redemption put to his credit, as if he were and had done infinitely more than he ever can be or do. He is "declared" after the pattern of his Saviour, to be the adopted "Son of God, with power by a" spiritual "resurrection." His tears are wiped away; his fears, misgivings, remorse, shame, are changed for "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;" he is clad in white, and has his crown given him. Thus justification is at first what renewal could be but at last; and, therefore, is by no means a mere result or consequence of renewal, but an independent, though not a distinct act of God's mercy. It is a great and public deed in the sight of heaven and hell; it is not done in a corner, but by Him who would show the world "what should be done unto those whom the King delighteth to honour." It is a pronouncing holy, while it proceeds to make holy. As Almighty



God in the beginning created the world augustly and in form, speaking the word not to exclude, but to proclaim the deed,—as in the days of His flesh He made use of the creature and changed its properties, not without a command;—so does He now create the soul by the breath of His mouth, by the sacrament of His Voice. The declaration of our righteousness, while it contains pardon for the past, ensures holiness for the future.

Such is the force of passages like the following:—“*To show forth* His righteousness for the remission of sins that are past—to *show forth*, I say, at this time His righteousness.” “*Who* shall lay any thing to the charge of God’s elect? *who* is he that condemneth?” “Having spoiled principalities and powers, *He made a show of them openly, triumphing over them by*” the Cross. Or let us consider the vision in the book of Zechariah:—“He showed me Joshua the High Priest, standing before the Angel of the Lord, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him. *And the Lord said* to Satan, The Lord rebuke thee, O Satan, even the Lord that hath chosen Jerusalem, rebuke thee; is not this a brand plucked out of the fire? Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments, and stood before the Angel. *And He answered and spake* unto those that stood before Him, saying, Take away the filthy garments from him; and unto him he said, *Behold* I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee; and I will clothe thee with change of raiment. And I

said, Let them set a fair mitre upon his head. So they set a fair mitre upon his head, and clothed him with garments<sup>1</sup>." The parable of the Prodigal Son would supply another illustration in point.

Hence, again, so much stress is laid upon taking our *shame* away, this being one characteristic benefit of justification as distinct from renewal. Guilt makes us veil our eyes in the sight of God and His Angels; when God justifies, He clears us from reproach, from the suspicions of holy creatures and the accusations of the devil. The Psalmist, for instance, says, "They looked unto him, and were lightened, and *their faces were not ashamed.*" "All they that hope in Thee, *shall not be ashamed.*" And the Prophet, in like manner, "For your *shame* ye shall have double, and for *confusion* they shall rejoice in their portion." "My people shall never be ashamed." And so again St. Paul, quoting Isaiah, "Whosoever believeth in Him, shall not be ashamed." In these, and similar passages, the great recovery or justification of the sinner in God's sight, is not a secret and inward gift, but an outward display of His power and love.

This particular force, as belonging to the idea of justification, might be illustrated in other ways from the Psalms. I will but refer, as a specimen, to a verse of the 37th, as commented on by St.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iii. viii. 33, 34. Col. ii. 15. Zech. iii. 1—5.

Athanasius. The Psalmist says, "He will *bring forth* thy righteousness *as clear as the light*, and thy just dealing *as the noonday*." Now here obedience goes *before* justification, so it is not an exact parallel of the justification of a *sinner*. I quote it then merely as illustrating what is meant by justification; and with that view, add the words of the illustrious Father in question. "Then will He bring forth," that is, He will establish *manifestly*, and will *pronounce* before all; not suffering the beauty of holy living to lie hid. For thy righteousness shall be evident to all, shining forth as the light, the light of the noonday. . . . Not only doth He justify him who confesses, and apply to him a merciful judgment, but He bringeth his righteousness to the light; that is, *He makes known to all* that He hath justified him. So it was with the penitent thief, whose sentence Jesus, when on the Cross at mid-day, thus *proclaimed* at noontide; and the righteousness which was upon him He brought unto the light, that is, to the knowledge of all. For when He said of him, "Verily I say unto thee, to-day shalt thou be with Me in paradise," it became clear to the whole earth, or rather it became a light to the earth; an encouragement to all who were in a state of penitence. "The brightness of righteousness," says the Psalmist, "shall not be hidden, as now; but shall be very manifest, as the sun at noonday," or, in our Lord's words, "Then shall the

righteous shine forth as the sun in the Kingdom of their Father.”

Our Lord's justification, as St. Paul terms it, upon His resurrection, to which I alluded just now, supplies another illustration. Christ differs from us in this, that He was the true and eternal Son, we sons only by adoption; He holy by nature, we made holy against nature; but He does not differ in His justification, which, simply considered, was what I have been showing ours to be, an open acknowledgment of Him by the Father as righteous and well-beloved, yet not nominally such (God forbid) but really. St. Paul, who in one place says that Christ was “*justified* by the Spirit,” explains himself elsewhere by saying that He was “*declared*”<sup>1</sup> to be the Son of God, with power, according to the Spirit of Holiness, by the resurrection of the dead.” With this agree the words of the Psalm, “I will *declare the decree*; the Lord hath *said* unto Me, Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee.” As, then, Christ's justification did not supersede but implied His inherent righteousness, yet was in itself distinct from it, and a testimony to it, so is our justification God's announcement, concurrent with His own deed so announced; yet in our case, preceding, not following His deed, because we are but *made* righteous, and not, as Christ, righteous from our birth.

<sup>1</sup> ὁρισθέντος. Cf. Luke xxiii. 47.

3. In His case, indeed, justification could be but a witness to what was true from everlasting; but in ours it is much more than a witness, nay more than an antecedent, as indeed has been already hinted. Our justification is not a mere declaration of a past fact, or a testimony to what is present, or an announcement of what is to come,—much less, as many say, a declaration of what neither has been, is, nor ever will be,—but it is the *cause* of that being which before was *not*, and henceforth *is*<sup>1</sup>. Strange it is, but such is the opinion of one of the two great schools of divinity which have all along been mentioned, that God's calling us righteous implies, not only that we have not been, but never shall be righteous. Surely, it is a strange paradox to say that a thing is not because He says it is; that the solemn averment of the Living and True God is inconsistent with the fact averred; that His accepting our obedience is a bar to His making it acceptable, and that the glory of His pronouncing us righteous, lies in His leaving us unrighteous. Surely, it is a paradox to maintain that the only safeguard of the doctrine of our being accepted freely and without

<sup>1</sup> Est differentia attendenda circa gratiam Dei et gratiam hominis; quia enim bonum creaturæ provenit ex voluntate divina, ideo ex dilectione Dei quæ vult creaturæ bonum, profluit aliquod bonum in creatura. Voluntas autem hominis movetur ex bono præexistente in rebus, et inde est quod dilectio hominis non causat totaliter rei bonitatem, sed præsupponit ipsam vel in parte vel in toto.—S. Thom. Quæst. 110. 1.

price, is our hearts being left odious and offensive to God. How does it diminish the freedom of the gift that He does more? how does it exalt His grace, that He lets remain in the "filthy rags" of nature, those whose obedience His omnipotence surely might make well-pleasing to Him, did He so will? We, indeed, can claim nothing; and if it be proved that Scripture promises no more, then it is presumptuous to seek it; but it is very certain that Scripture, again and again, speaks of our hearts and bodies, our thoughts, words, and works, as righteous; so it is not for want of Scripture warrant that we shrink from believing this gracious truth, but we are determined the word righteous, in such passages, shall not really mean righteous; we put a second sense upon the word, we explain away the sacred text, and deny a sacred doctrine, all because we have a notion that we are exalting the fulness and richness of God's mercy by circumscribing it. Alas! it is an opinion too widely spread, too pertinaciously held to need formal statement, that if God be supposed to impart any intrinsic acceptableness to our services, this must diminish our debt to Him; that the more He does for us, the less we must feel indebted to Him; and though He give all other graces, He cannot give us humility with them. Far be from us notions as contrary to Scripture as they are disparaging to God's love; no, let us believe the comfortable truth, that the justifying grace of God effects what it declares. "The Voice

of the Lord is mighty in *operation*, the Voice of the Lord is a glorious Voice." It is not like some idle sound, or a vague rumour coming at random, and tending no whither, but it is "the Word which goeth out of His mouth;" it has a sacramental power, being the instrument as well as the sign of His will. It never can "return unto Him void," "but it accomplishes that which He pleases, and prospers in the thing whereto He sends it." Imputed righteousness is the coming in of actual righteousness. They whom God's sovereign voice pronounces just, forthwith become just. He declares a fact, and makes it a fact by declaring it. He imputes, not a name, but a substantial Word, which, being "ingrafted" in our own hearts, "is able to save our souls<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Quando Deus justificat impium, declarando justum, facit etiam justum, quoniam judicium Dei secundum veritatem est. Bellarm. de Justif. ii. 3. Verbum Domini ejusque voluntas efficax est, et hoc ipso quod aliquem justum esse pronunciat, aut supponit justum eum esse, aut re ipsa justum facit, ne verbum ejus mendax sit. Vasquez, Quæst. 112. Disp. 202. c. 5. Vid. also Ysambert de Grat. ad Quæst. 113. Disp. 1. Art. 2. Cum Deus ineffabili amore complectatur filios suos, *necesse est ut notam seu characterem paterni sui amoris illis imprimat et insculpat.* Hoc autem aliud non est quam imago quædam et similitudo sanctitatis suæ. Davenant de Habit. Just. c. 3. Fatemur ergo simul atque justificatur quispiam, *necessario* innovationem quoque sequi. Calv. Antid. p. 324. But then he adds it is only a necessary *accident*. Denique ubi de *causâ* quæritur quorsum attinet *accidens inseparabile* obtrudi? Vid. also Chemnitz de Justif. p. 128. fin. This then is the point at issue; God speaks, and a new creation

God's word, I say, effects what it announces. This is its characteristic all through Scripture. Thus in the beginning He *said*, "Let there be light, and there *was* light<sup>1</sup>." Word and deed went together in creation; and so again "in the regeneration," "*The Lord gave the word, great was the company of the preachers.*" So again in His miracles, He *called* Lazarus from the grave, and the

follows; is this new creation involved in the *essence* of the justifying *act*, or only joined as a *necessary accident*? [Cordis renovatio] justificationis obtentæ non *causa* (no one says it is a "cause" *except* in the philosophical sense, that whiteness is the cause of a white wall, to take the common illustration) *sed comes, simul tempore adveniens, sed ordine causalitatis subsequens.* Davenant de Habit. Justit. c. 24. Cf. Bitontinus's language, quoted above, p. 69. also Ysambert de Gratia, Disp. iv. Art. 4. Chamier de Sanct. x. 2. § 16. well states the case "Quærebatur an homo, cum justificatur, acquirit justitiam et sanctitatem inhærentem? Immo, inquam, illud *cum justificatur* sophisticum, quia ambiguum; itaque ineptum constituendo statui controversiæ. Potest enim significare *conjunctionem temporis*, ut sensus sit, an simul ac justificatur homo, acquirat etiam illam sanctitatem, ut, quum quis deambulans in sole, simul calefit, et colorem mutat in fuscum. Potest etiam *identitatem*, ut ita loquar, *rei*; ac si dicam, utrum cum ambulat, moveatur homo." The latter alternative is the Roman, the former the Calvinistic; that in the text, that sanctification is neither a necessary *condition*, nor is a necessary *accident* of justification, but a direct and necessary *result*, or, as St. Chrysostom speaks, 'Ο μὲν σταυρὸς τὴν κατάραν ἔλυσεν, ἡ δὲ πίστις τὴν δικαιοσύνην εἰσήγαγεν, ἡ δὲ δικαιοσύνη τοῦ πνεύματος τὴν χάριν ἐπεσπάσατο. in Gal. iii. 5.

<sup>1</sup> The same illustration is made use of by Mr. Knox, Remains, vol. i. p. 265.



dead arose; He *said*, "Be thou cleansed," and the leprosy-departed; He *rebuked* the wind and waves, and they were still; He *commanded* the evil spirits, and they fled away; He said to St. Peter and St. Andrew, St. John, St. James, and St. Matthew, "Follow Me," and they arose, for "His word was with power;" and so again in the Sacraments His word is the consecrating principle. As He "blessed" the loaves and fishes, and they multiplied, so He "blessed and brake," and the bread became His Body. Further, His voice is the instrument of destruction as well as of creation. As He "upholds all things by the word of His power," so "at the Voice of the Archangel and at the trump of God," the visible world will dissolve; and as His "Voice" formerly "shook the earth," so once more "the Lord shall roar out of Zion, and utter His Voice from Jerusalem, and the heavens and the earth shall shake <sup>1</sup>."

It would seem, then, in all cases, that God's word is the instrument of His deed. When, then, He solemnly utters the command, "Let the soul be just," it becomes just. By what medium or in what manner, is a further question not now to be discussed <sup>2</sup>. Here it will be more in place, in conclusion, to mention another analogy in God's dealings with us, which is instanced in the process of justification as above considered; I mean, the mode

<sup>1</sup> Joel iii. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Vid. Lecture VI.

in which prophecy is introduced in Scripture, and the purposes it is made answer in sacred history. It has been noticed before now<sup>1</sup>, as a characteristic of Scripture prophecy, that it precedes and introduces into the world the great providences of God's mercy. When He would set apart a family or people for some extraordinary end, He reveals His purposes in the case of the first father of the line. He puts His word upon it in its origin, and seals up for it its destinies in that word, which, like some potent charm, works secretly towards the proposed end. Thus when the chosen people were to be formed, Almighty God not only chose Abraham, but spoke over Him the promises which in due time were to be accomplished. The twelve tribes had each its own character and history stamped on it from the first. When the royal line of the Messiah was to be begun in Judah and renewed in David, on each patriarch in turn did Providence inscribe a prediction of what was to be. Such as this is justification as regards an individual. It is a sort of prophecy, recognizing God's hidden election, announcing His purposes before the event, and mysteriously working towards their fulfilment; even "the oath which He sware" to us, "more abundantly to show unto the heirs of promise the immutability of His counsel," "that we might have a strong consolation who have fled for refuge to lay

<sup>1</sup> Vid. Davison on Prophecy.

hold upon the hope set before us." And in thus openly setting forth what is secretly in course of operation, it is an appointment especially characteristic of that supernatural system which we call revealed religion. As God conducts His Scripture Dispensations by Prophecy, and anticipates Nature by Miracle, so does He in a parallel way operate upon our hearts through justification.

From what has been said, then, it appears that justification is an announcement or fiat of Almighty God breaking upon the gloom of our natural state as the Creative Word upon chaos; that it *declares* the soul righteous, and in that declaration, on the one hand, conveys *pardon* for its past sins, and on the other *makes* it actually *righteous*<sup>1</sup>. That it is a declaration, has been made evident from its including, as all allow, an amnesty for the past; for past sins are removable only by an imputation of righteousness. And that it involves an actual creation in righteousness, has been argued from the analogy of Almighty God's doings in Scripture, in which we

<sup>1</sup> What is here called a *declaration*, Calvin calls an *acceptation*; with this verbal difference, the following passage from him, as far as it goes, expresses what is stated in the text;—"Tota nostra disceptatio est de *causa* justificationis. Hanc Tridentini patres duplicem esse fingunt; ac si partim *remissione peccatorum*, partim *spirituali regeneratione* justi essemus. . . . Ego autem *unicam* et *simplicem* esse assero, quæ tota continetur in *gratuita* acceptatione." Antid. p. 324.

find His words were represented as effective. And its text, most abundantly, establishes both conclusions; the former, from its use of the word justification; the latter, from its use of the word just or righteous; showing, that in matter of fact, he who is justified, becomes just, or he who is declared righteous, is thereby actually made righteous<sup>1</sup>. Lastly, both doctrines are laid down in our Articles; the former in the 11th Article, the latter in the 13th.

<sup>2</sup> Davenant's statement on the subject may be entirely received, though he was a Calvinist:—"Ex usu quotidiani sermonis, qualitas inhærens, præsertim si prædominans sit, denominat subjectum, licet simul inhæreat aliquid contrariæ qualitatis. Dicimus enim non modo nivem album, aut cygnum candidum esse, sed candida tecta vocamus et vestimenta candida, quibus tamen sæpissime maculæ aliquæ offusæ sunt, et aspersiones nigredinis. Sic etiam aquam calidam vocamus, non modo eam quæ ebullit præ fervore, sed etiam quæ acquisivit gradus aliquot caloris, frigore nondum totaliter expulso. Ex quibus patet, eadem ratione renatos omnes ab inhærente justitia *vere* nominari et censi justos, quamvis ea inchoata adhuc sit et imperfecta. Justos dico non justificatos, quia justus vocabulum, ut nunc loquimur de justo, nihil aliud designat quam præditum infuso habitu seu inhærente qualitate justitiæ, et justificati vocabulum includit absolutionem ab omni peccato et acceptationem ad vitam æternam." De Habit. Just. c. 3. fin. It must be carefully kept in view, that the object proposed in these citations from divines of very various sentiments, is that of showing how they one and all converge and approximate to one main clear and consistent doctrine, if they could forget the language of their respective schools.

## LECTURE IV.

---

### DERIVED SENSES OF THE WORD JUSTIFICATION.

---

1 COR. iv. 20.

“The Kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.”

IF justification be God's glorious act declaring us righteous, and thereby as its direct and necessary result making us righteous,—if it be an act external to us, continued on into an act within us,—if it be a divine Voice issuing in a divine work, acceptance on the one part leading to acceptableness on the other, imputation to participation,—it requires very few words to explain how it comes to have been taken for what it involves; in other words, how justification has been said to be renewal, or to follow on or consist in renewal, or renewal said to be justification. And yet not a few words may be necessary to make familiar to our thoughts what is so obvious to the reason,—nay, to allay the feelings of distrust with which the very notion of such an attempt is commonly received at this day. Little indeed can any-

how be effected in the course of a single Lecture, yet suggestions on the subject may not be without their profit in the case of inquiring minds.

I say, then, if the direct result of justification be actual righteousness, it is not at all unnatural or strange, that righteousness or renewal should be called our justification; (as little as saying, as we do without scruple, that a man has no "life" in him, when we mean no "activity" or no "heat,"—heat and activity being effects of life,—or in using "animation" first for life, then for liveliness;) nor is it at all justifiable, after the fashion of the day, to set down such a mode of speech to spiritual blindness, and to stigmatize it as perilous to its maintainers. My reasons are as follow:—

1. Justification renews, therefore it may fitly be called renewal. Is not this an allowable variety of expression which is exemplified every day? For instance, to *tempt* is to solicit or assail with temptation, to invite towards evil; yet it not unfrequently means to overcome by temptation, or to seduce. To *persuade* means either to use persuasives or to succeed in persuading. To *cure* a patient is properly to take care of him. To gain a *battle* is to gain a victory, conquest being the intended object of engaging. A *commander* is one who is obeyed as well as commands. To *call* spirits from the deep is not merely to call, but so to call that they come, or to evoke. In such cases we anticipate the result of an action from the beginning, and contemplate it in

its completeness. Certain implications or effects are necessary for the adequate notion of a thing, and in speaking of it we take their presence for granted; we realize it in our minds, by affixing to it names which properly belong to them. To call spirits implies an effectual call; and to declare just is to make just.

It is a parallel mode of speaking, to say that justification *consists* in renewal, or that renewal is justification. This is much the same as saying, which we are apt to do, that a certain remarkable event is a *Providence*. It is a result, a manifestation of Divine Providence. And so our works of obedience are said to be a justification or a declaring righteous, as being the result and token of that declaration. To be justified *by, through, or from* works, is nothing more or less than to be justified *in* works; and it may suitably be urged against the thoughtless, lukewarm, formal, and superstitious, how they can suppose themselves justified, seeing that God justifies in works, or that works are the mode, medium, or state of justification.

I have before now spoken of justification as a sort of sacrament; it is so, by a figure of speech, being an external word effecting an inward grace. Here, then, we shall have another illustration of the matter in hand, which is the more apposite because, as it happens, our Catechism becomes a party to it, as allowing itself in the same verbal inaccuracy, in explaining the nature of a sacrament, as is com-

mited when justification and renewal are made equivalent with one another. A sacrament, it will be recollected, is there defined to be "an *outward visible sign* of an inward spiritual grace." But if so, the inward grace is *not* part of the sacrament, but a result distinct from it. Yet in the very next answer, upon the question, "*How many parts* are there in a sacrament?" we are told there are "*Two*; the outward visible sign, *and* the *inward spiritual grace*," as if the inward *grace* were *not* distinct, but an internal result or essential *part* of the sacrament. Who does not see the real meaning in spite of this apparent inconsistency? viz. that (a right recipient being supposed, which is a point foreign to our present purpose,) the act of administering a sacrament so involves and secures the inward grace, that the grace comes under the meaning of the term; so that whether or not it be *part* of the sacrament, is a mere question of words, the term in its elementary sense denoting the outward act, in its full meaning comprising the inward grace also. And in like manner we may say, without any inconsistency and with truth, first, that justification is *only* that acceptance on God's part, which is the earnest of renewal; next, that it consists of *two* parts, acceptance and renewal. Justification tends to sanctify; and to quench its sanctifying power, is as if we stopped a man's breath; it is the death of that from which it proceeds.

Again, we speak of being *baptized* with God's



*grace*; and so we may allowedly say, that we are *justified* or accepted by *obedience*. And we might with propriety urge that *baptism* is not a mere outward rite, but an *inward* power; in like manner we may say that *justification* is a *change of heart*.

2. I have been arguing from the essential union between justification and renewal, that they are convertible terms; but there are still more urgent reasons why they should be so. God's justification does not merely *change* us, it really *makes* us just. How can we be said *really and truly* to be righteous, in a sense distinct from the *imputation* of righteousness? This requires a word or two in explanation.

I observe, then, we become inwardly just or righteous in God's sight, upon our regeneration, in the same sense in which we are utterly reprobate and abominable by nature, or (to use the strong language of the Homilies) as we are since Adam's fall "corrupt and naught," without any spark of goodness in us, "without any virtuous or godly motion," "the image of the devil," "firebrands of hell and bondslaves to the devil," having in ourselves no one part of our former purity and cleanness; but being altogether spotted and defiled, and "nothing else but a lump of sin<sup>1</sup>." These fearful, yet most true words, do not imply that our original nature is pure evil, as the devil is, though

<sup>1</sup> Sermons of the Nativity, Passion, and Whitsunday.

even to the devil's nature, left to itself, it assuredly tends; they are not inconsistent with an admission that the natural man may have many high thoughts and wishes, and may love and do what is noble, generous, beneficent, courageous, and wise. But the writer means that, whatever good principles, in whatever degree, remain to us since Adam's fall, they are, to use his own expression, "*altogether spotted and defiled,*" thoroughly and hopelessly steeped in evil, saturated with evil, dissolved in evil. They do not exist by themselves in their unmixed nature, as if we could act on them and nothing but them, whatever might be their worth if so exerted; but though good, viewed in themselves, they are in fact and as found in us, of a sinful nature. All that we do, whether from better principles or from worse, whether of an indifferent nature or directly moral, whether spontaneously, or habitually, or accidentally, all is pervaded with a quality of evil so odious to Almighty God, as to convert even our best services into profanations; or in the expressive words of St. Paul, "They that are in the flesh cannot *please* God." This, I conceive, is a definition of unrighteousness,—to call it a moral condition *displeasing*, offensive to God; or, again, of original sinfulness,—a state of *wrath* and alienation. Hence our Article says, "Works" done in this state, or "before justification," "are not *pleasant* to God," but "have the *nature* of sin." It is true He has before now, in His great mercy,

accepted such works, as the zeal of Jael, the self-abasement of Naaman, or the faith of the widow of Sarepta; but (as the last-mentioned expresses it in her own case) their "sin" was still in "remembrance;" it was not abolished, it still "stank" before God and was loathsome; and if He vouchsafed to admit them to any measure of His favour, He did so from respect to the merits of that Atonement which was to be made, and in consideration of those good feelings, good in the abstract, not in the concrete, which lay in their souls as precious metal in the ore<sup>1</sup>, or as generous liquor or sweet fruit in corruption. Still those good feelings, even though they might come from the grace of God, as their first source, were not such as to sanctify their works, or make them pleasing or just before God.

This, then, is the sense in which we are unright-

<sup>1</sup> This doctrine differs from the Roman concerning merit *de congruo*, because Romanists hold that God *cannot but* accept and meet the offerings and services of the unregenerate, not indeed "necessitate coactionis sed immutabilitatis suæ;" whereas the gaoler at Philippi was admitted to regeneration and the widow of Sarepta not, and Capernaum more favoured than Sodom, though making less return. The Romanists seem to deny God's *inscrutable* election. Next, their doctrine has a tendency to exalt outward sanctity at the expense of inward holiness, as if outwardly good actions, though done by one in a state of mortal sin, with only a good natural intention, availed or merited congruously, or *ex opere operato*. Vidd. Laurence, Bampton Lectures, IV. They seem to agree with us in attributing this better sort of works before justification to the grace of God.

teous or displeasing to God by nature, and in the same sense we are actually righteous and pleasing to Him in a state of grace. Not that there is not abundant evil still remaining in us, but that justification, coming to us in the power and "inspiration of the Spirit," so far dries up the fountain of bitterness and impurity, that we are forthwith released from God's wrath and damnation, and are enabled in our better deeds to please Him. It places us above the line in the same sense in which we were before below it. By nature we were not absolutely devilish, but had a curse within us which blighted and poisoned our most religious offerings; by grace we are gifted, not with perfection, but with a principle hallowing and sweetening all that we are, all that we do religiously, sustaining, hiding, and (in a sense) pleading for what remains of sin in us, "making intercession for us according to the will of God." As by nature sin was sovereign in us in spite of the remains of heaven, so now grace triumphs through righteousness in spite of the remains of sin.

The justifying Word, then, conveys the Spirit, and the Spirit makes our works "pleasing" and "acceptable" to God, and acceptableness is righteousness; so that the justified are just, really just, in degree indeed more or less, but really in this respect,—that their obedience has in it a gracious quality, which the obedience of unregenerate man has not. And here, we see in what sense Chris-

tians are enabled to *fulfil* the Law, which they certainly are in spite of modern divines, because St. Paul says so. He says expressly, that Christ came that “the *righteousness of the Law* might be *fulfilled in us*, who walk not after the flesh, but *after the Spirit.*” He says, “*in us*,” not only *out of us*. And to make his statement still more certain, and to explain it, he adds, “The minding of the flesh,” our natural state, “is enmity against God; for *it is not subject to the Law of God*, neither indeed can be. So, then, they that are in the flesh, *cannot please God.*” “*But ye*,” he continues, “*ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit*, if so be the Spirit of God dwell in you;” that is, Ye who have the Spirit *are* subject or obedient to the Law, and you *can* please God; in you the *righteousness* of the Law is fulfilled. Christians, then, fulfil the Law, in the sense of pleasing God; and “pleasing” is a very significant word, when well weighed. Not that we are able to please Him simply and entirely, (for “in many things we offend all;” and “if we say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us,”) but that the presence of the Spirit is a sanctifying virtue in our hearts, changing the character of our services, making our obedience new in kind, not merely fuller in degree, and in this sense a satisfying obedience, rising up, answering to the *kind* of obedience which is due from us, to the *nature* of the claims which our Creator, Redeemer, and Sanctifier has upon us.

And this, surely, is St. John's doctrine as well as St. Paul's, though brought forward by him in the way of warning, rather than encouragement. He declares solemnly in his general Epistle, that He that *doeth righteousness* is righteous; as if doing righteousness was that in which righteousness consists. And then, that there may be no mistake, he adds, "*even as He is righteous.*" What very strong words! implying that our righteousness is a resemblance, and therefore a partial communication or infusion into our hearts of that superhuman righteousness of Christ, which is our true justification. Again, presently, after saying that our possessing "love" gives us "boldness in the day of judgment," he adds, "because as *He is*, so are we in this world." That love, then, which He had in infinite perfection, and which, as being in Him the fulfilling of the Law, is imputed to us for our justification, is also actually given us in measure, shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost, as an earnest of what will be given without measure hereafter.

It seems, then, that a Christian's life is not only moral as opposed to vice and crime, not only religious as opposed to unbelief, not only renewed as opposed to the old Adam, but spiritual, loving, pleasing, acceptable, available, just, justifying; not, of course, the origin or well-spring of our acceptableness, (God forbid!) but we believe this,—that He who eighteen hundred years since purchased for us sinners the gift of life eternal, with His

own blood, and at our baptism spoke over each of us the Word of acceptance, and admitted us at once to His presence, by the same Word forthwith proceeded to realize His gracious purpose; that "His word ran very swiftly," as being "living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword;" that it reached even to our hearts, conveying its virtue into our nature, making us what the Almighty Father can delight in, and so returning to Him not "void," but laden with the triumphs of His grace, the fruits of righteousness as "an odour of a sweet smell," as "spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God, by Jesus Christ." He works out His justification towards us, in us, with us, through us, and from us, till He receives back in produce what He gave in seed. It was His very purpose from the beginning, as announced by His Prophets, to form a people to Himself, who might show forth His praise, and magnify Him, and be as jewels in the robe of His glory, who might be a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people. Saints, not sinners, are His delight and His honour.

3. There is yet a third sense which has naturally led to statements of our being justified by our obedience, which I will briefly notice. We can do nothing good of ourselves; with God's grace we can do what is good. This is what I have been hitherto saying; but this is not all,—*with* His grace we are gifted not only with the capacity of being led into truth and holiness, but the power of co-operating

with Him. God's grace unfetters the will which by nature is in bondage, and brings into existence the faculty of accepting or rejecting that grace itself. It enables us to obey, not as instruments merely, but as free agents, who need not obey, while they obey, except that they choose to obey; and whose obedience is for that reason more pleasing to God, as proceeding more entirely from themselves, "not by constraint," but "willingly" and "heartily." It does not follow from this, that there is any one good thought, word, or deed of ours, which proceeds from ourselves only, and which we present to God *as* ours; but the circumstance that in such acceptable offerings as we render Him, there has been a co-operation on our part, has proved a reason, over and above those already mentioned, why justification has been said to consist in our services not in God's imputation; those services forming a concurrent cause of that imputation being ratified. Without such co-operation, that imputation would be void; as the grace of a sacrament is suspended when the recipient is not duly prepared. Hence, St. Peter urges us to "make our calling and election *sure*;" St. Paul, to "*work out* our own salvation with fear and trembling;" and St. John declares that "whatsoever we ask, we receive of Him, *because we keep His commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight.*"



For these reasons, then, though justification, properly speaking, is a work external to us, it may be viewed as consisting in evangelical obedience; first, because obedience is specially involved in God's imputation; next, because He does vouchsafe to realize in part within us what He has provided in its fulness out of us; and, lastly, because our concurrence in being justified, is a necessary condition of His justifying.

Further light will be thrown on what has been said, by considering certain circumstances which have tended still more to vary the language of theology on the subject.

1. Over and above the various senses attached to the word *justify*, the word *justification* varies in its grammatical force, and gives rise in consequence to no small apparent difference between parties who really agree together. I mean, it has two senses, an active and a passive; and though it is not always plain, in which sense writers use it, yet on the whole, one class of divines use it actively, and another passively. The word may either mean *justifying* or *being justified*; in the latter sense it is what man receives, in the former what God gives. This holds in the case of many other words; we speak, for instance, of a Bishop's confirmation and a child's confirmation; but the child is confirmed, the Bishop confirms. In like manner justification sometimes stands for an act on God's part,

sometimes for an event or a state which comes upon man. Now it so happens that Protestant writers, for the most part, take the word to mean God's justifying us; whereas Romanists seem to use it for our being or continuing justified. For instance, the Council of Trent defines it to be "not the mere remission of sins, but the *sanctification* and the *renovation* of the inner man by the voluntary acceptance of grace and gifts." And St. Thomas speaks of it as a *change, passage, or motion* of the soul from one state to another. Here the word is used in a passive sense. On the other hand, our own controversialists, of whatever cast of opinion, following the Protestants of the Continent, understand by justification the *act* on God's part, whether instantaneous or sustained, by which He justifies the sinner. Melancthon used the word in both senses;—so do our Homilies, as the following passages will show. When, for instance, they declare that "justification is not the *office* of man, but *of God*," they adopt its active sense; yet, elsewhere, they speak of "this justification or *righteousness*, which we so receive of God's mercy and Christ's merits, embraced by faith," as being "*taken, accepted, and allowed of God* for our perfect and full justification," where the word denotes our *state* of acceptance, or that in which acceptance consists<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Nimirum illi [Pontificii] *justificatum* considerant, nos potius in abstracto *justificationem*. Chamier de Justif. xxi. 1.

Now this difference affects the language of the controversy in this respect among others. Justification, I have said, is in its fulness a great appointment of God towards an individual, beginning in His Word spoken, and returning back to Him through him over whom it is spoken, laden with the spoils of victory. It is a Word having a work for its complement. Such is the characteristic of God's doings, as manifested in Scripture, that what man does by working, God does by speaking. Man labours, and a work follows; God speaks, and a work follows. When man would raise a fabric,

Dicendum quod justificatio passive accepta imputat *motum* ad justitiam. . . . Justificatio [impii] importat *transmutationem* quandam de statu injustitiæ ad statum justitiæ prædictæ. S. Th. quæst. 113. Art. 1. Ysambert, *ibid.* disp. ii. Art. ii. S. Th. also uses it actively. Augustine says, Donec ad Christum transeat et auferatur velamen, id est *transeat ad gratiam*, et intelligatur ab ipso nobis esse justificationem, *qua faciamus quod jubet*. De Sp. et Lit. 30. Justificatio est *acceptio* remissionis peccatorum et reconciliationis seu *acceptationis* gratuitæ propter Filium Dei. Melanchth. Exam. (tom. 1. f. 312.) In the foregoing passage the word is taken *passively*; and in the following, *actively*. Justificatio est *remissio* peccatorum et *acceptatio* coram Deo, cum qua conjuncta est donatio Spiritus sancti. Melanchth. Catech. Art. de Justif. Nos justificationem simpliciter interpretamur *acceptioem* qua nos Deus in gratiam receptos pro justis habet. Calvin. Justif. iii. 11. 2. Apparet justificationem . . . nihil aliud esse quam gratuitum Dei *actum*, &c. Bull, Harm. Diss. 1. i. § 4. Vid. also Perkins, Ref. Cath. 4. Davenant de Just. Hab. 34. p. 329. Barrow, vol. ii. Sermon. 5. p. 55. Forbes, Instr. Hist. Theol. viii. 23. &c. &c.

or achieve an object, he exerts himself by hands and strength, by thought and tongue, by ingenuity of contrivance, and multiplicity of resources, by a long and varied course of action, terminating in the work proposed. All the acts of the Divine Mind are of course an incomprehensible mystery to worms such as we are; but so much Scripture tells us, whatever it means, that God accomplishes His work, not by an action, but by "the word of His power." When man makes a thing, it is an effort on his part passing into a result; when God creates, it is by His fiat, by a word issuing in a work. He does not make, He says, "Let it be made." The Hebrew style accurately conveys this token of Divine Majesty. The Psalmist says, not "He spake, and He did," but "He spake, and *it was done.*" It was but a word on His part, but a substantial Word, with a work close upon it as its attendant shadow. In like manner He does not make us righteous, but He *calls* us righteous, and we are forthwith *made* righteous. Justification, then, which in its full meaning is the whole great appointment of God, from beginning to end, may be viewed on its two sides,—active and passive, in its beginning and its completion, in what God does, and what man receives; and while in its passive sense, man is made righteous, in its active, God calls or declares. That is, it will stand either for imputation or for sanctification. Thus divines, who in the main agree in what the great mercy of God is *as a whole*, may

differ as to what should be called justification ; for according as they view it as God's giving or man's receiving, they will consider it God's accounting righteous or man's becoming righteous. One party, then, in the controversy consider it to be a mere acceptance, the other to be mainly renewal. The one consider it in its effects, the other in its primary idea. St. Austin, that is, *explains* it, and Protestants *define* it <sup>1</sup>. The latter describe it theore-

<sup>1</sup> " It may be objected that St. Austin and some others of the Fathers, do use the word commonly according to the sense of the Tridentine Council. I answer that, the point having never been discussed, and they never having thoroughly considered the sense of St. Paul, might unawares take the *word* as it sounded in Latin, especially the *sense* they affixed to it, signifying a matter very true and certain in Christianity. The like hath happened to other Fathers in other cases ; and might happen to them in this, not to speak accurately in points that never had been sifted by disputation. More, I think, we need not say in answer to their authority."—Barrow, *Of Justif. by Faith*. In like manner, though on a different side, Vasquez speaks of " ea quæ pertinent ad formalem causam nostræ justificationis," as being " difficillima eorum quæ de justificatione nostra tractari solent, *neque præteritis sæculis tam exacte a patribus discussa*, quam ea quæ de necessitate auxilii gratiæ ad operandum et recte vivendum hactenus a nobis sunt disputata." Quæst. 112. Disp. 202. c. 1. init. Father Paul goes further, observing that " the opinion of Luther concerning justifying faith, that it is a confidence and certain persuasion of the promise of God, with the consequences that follow, of the distinction between the Law and the Gospel, and of the quality of works depending on the one and the other, was *never thought of by any school writer, and never confuted or discussed.*" Hist. ii.

tically, and the former practically. The Protestant sense is more scientifically correct, and the ancient use more living and real. A man, for instance, who described bread as "the staff of life," need not disagree with another who defined it only chemically or logically, but he would be his inferior in philosophy and his superior in real knowledge.

If God's word and work be as closely united as act and result are in ourselves, surely as we use the word "work" in both senses, to mean both the doing and the thing done, so we may fairly speak of justification as renewal, not as mere acceptance. Serious men, dealing with realities, not with abstract conceptions, entering into the field of practical truth not the lists of controversy, not refuting an opponent, but teaching the poor, have ever found it impossible to confine justification to a mere declaring of what is also by the same grace effected. They have taken it to mean what they saw, felt, handled, as existing in fact in themselves and others. When they speak of justification, it is of a wonderful grace of God, not in the heavens, but nigh to them, even in their mouth and in their heart, which does not really exist at all unless brought into effect and manifested in renewal; and they let their idea of it run on into renewal as its just limit, there being no line of demarcation, no natural boundary in its course till it reached renewal<sup>1</sup>. Till then, it was in their minds but a deed

<sup>1</sup> "To each person sincerely embracing the gospel, and con-

inchoate (as it is called); not complete, till it had sought and found, and assimilated to itself the soul which was its subject. Unless it was thus ratified it passed away, as rays of light where there is

tinuing in stedfast adherence thereto, God doth afford His Holy Spirit as a principle productive of all inward sanctity, and virtuous dispositions in his heart, enabling and quickening him to discharge the conditions of faith and obedience required from him, and undertaken by him, that *which is by some termed,* making a person just, infusion into his soul of righteousness, of grace, of virtuous habits. In the Scripture style it is called, 'acting by the Spirit,' 'bestowing the gift of the Holy Ghost,' 'renovation of the Holy Ghost,' 'creation to good works,' 'sanctification by the Spirit,' &c., which phrases denote partly the collation of a principle enabling to perform good works, partly the design of religion tending to that performance. Now all these acts (as by the general conduct of Christians, and according to the sense of the ancient Catholic Church, so) by all considerable parties seeming to dissent, and so earnestly disputing about the point of justification, are acknowledged and ascribed unto God; but with which of them the act of justification is solely or chiefly coincident, whether it signifieth barely some one of them, or extendeth to more of them, or comprehendeth them all, (according to the constant meaning of the word in Scripture,) are questions coming under debate, and so eagerly prosecuted: of which questions, whatever the true resolution be, *it cannot methinks be of so great consequence,* as to cause any great anger or animosity in disputes one toward another, seeing they all conspire in avowing the acts, whatever they be, meant by the word justification, although in other terms, seeing all the dispute is about the precise and adequate notion of the word justification; whence *those* questions might well be waved as unnecessary grounds of contention, and it might suffice to understand the points of doctrine which it relateth to in other terms laying that aside as ambiguous and litigious."—Barrow, *ibid.*

nothing to reflect them, or as a sound where there is lack of air for it to vibrate upon<sup>1</sup>.

Such is the contrast existing between the practical and exact senses of the word *justification*; and it is remarkable that both the one and other have been adopted by our standard writers, as in the Homilies. As controversialists they are Protestants, as pastoral teachers they are disciples of the Ancient Church. Who, for instance, is more clear than Bishop Bull in laying down that justification means *making* righteous? yet who more strenuous in maintaining that it consists in *being* righteous? What he is, such are Hammond, Taylor, Wilson, and a multitude of others; who in this day are called inconsistent, as if holding two views, whereas those two views are rather proved to be one, because the same divines hold them.

2. This difference, then, in the grammatical sense, attached to the word *justification*, even by those who mainly agree what it is to *justify*, is one additional cause of misunderstanding in the controversy. Another is the difference of aspect under which justification appears, according as this or that

<sup>1</sup> Sine voluntate tua non erit in te justitia Dei. Voluntas quidem non est nisi tua, justitia non est nisi Dei. Esse potest justitia Dei sine voluntate tua, sed in te esse non potest præter voluntatem tuam. August. Serm. 169. The whole of this passage, which is beautifully illustrative of the practical way in which the Fathers teach the doctrine of justification, will be extracted at length in another place.



date is taken in the period through which it continues. It is substantially the same from first to last; but the relative importance of its constituent parts varies with the length of its continuance. Its parts are differently developed as time goes on; and men may seem to differ as to what they understand by it, when they are but surveying it at a different date, and therefore in a different light. A very few words will show this.

The great benefit of justification, as all will allow, it is this one thing,—the transference of the soul from the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of Christ. We may, if we will, divide this event into parts, and say that it is *both* pardon *and* renovation, but such a division is merely mental, and does not affect the transit (so to speak) itself, which is but one act. If a man is saved from drowning, you may, if you will, say he is *both* rescued from the water *and* brought into atmospheric air; this is a discrimination in words not in things. He cannot be brought out of the water, which he cannot breathe, *except* by entering the air which he can breathe. In like manner, there, is in fact no middle state between a state of *wrath* and a state of *holiness*. In justifying, God takes away what is past, *by* bringing in what is new. He takes us out of the fire by lifting us in His everlasting hands, and enwrapping us in His own glory.

Such is justification; but is it not plain that in its beginnings it will consist of scarcely any thing

but pardon? because all that we have hitherto done is sinful in its nature, and has to be pardoned, but to be renewed is a work of time; whereas as time goes on, and we become more holy, it will consist more in renewal, if not less in pardon, and at least there is no original sin, as when it was first granted, to be forgiven. It takes us then at Baptism out of original sin, and leads us all through life towards the purity of Angels. Naturally, then, when the word is used to denote the beginning of a justified state, it only, or chiefly, means acceptance; when the continuance, chiefly sanctification. Writers, then, of congenial sentiments, or the same writers on different occasions, will speak of it first as consisting in the remission of sins, with Calvin or Melancthon, next with the Romanists, as consisting in renewal.

To conclude: all these things being considered; it does seem like a want of faith not to hold, and a superstition not to profess, that in some sufficient sense Christ, as our righteousness, fulfils the Law *in us* as well as for us; that He justifies us, not only in word, but in power, bringing the ark with its mercy seat into the temple of our hearts; manifesting, setting up there His new kingdom, and the power and glory of His Cross <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Chemnitz makes the following curious confession, that common sense is against the Lutheran doctrine:—"Et sane, *si humana consulenda essent judicia, novitati reatorum omnium calculis tribueretur gloria justitiæ coram Deo ad vitam æternam.*

Non enim est opus seu effectio humanarum virium, *sed est donum et operatio Spiritus sancti*, unde bona opera vocantur fructus Spiritus (Eph. v.). Et est *beneficium Dei Mediatoris*, propter cuius meritum credentes renovantur spiritu mentis suæ, ut per Spiritum sanctum *inchoetur* in ipsis conformitas cum lege Dei, secundum interiorem hominem (Rom. vii.). *Et illa novitas vocatur justitia* (Rom. vi. 1 Joan. iii.). De renatorum etiam bonis operibus dicit Scriptura, (Tit. iii.). Hoc acceptum est coram Deo (1 Joan. iii.). Ea quæ placita sunt coram ipso facimus. Hæc profecto valde magna et præclara sunt." Examen, de Justif. p. 134. And then he goes on to say that other passages of Scripture negative the idea.

## LECTURE V.

---

### DISCORDANT SENSES GIVEN TO THE WORD RIGHTEOUSNESS.

---

ROM. v. 19.

“As by one man’s disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of One shall many be made righteous.”

PLAINER words, one should think, could not be found than these, to express the doctrine I have been insisting on. Christ, who is the Well-beloved, All-powerful Son of God, is possessed by every Christian as a Saviour in the full meaning of that title, or becomes to us righteousness; and in and after so becoming, really communicating a measure, and a continually increasing measure, of what He is. In the words of the Apostle, “We are *complete* in Him,” and again, of the Evangelist, “Of His fulness have all we *received*, and *grace for grace*.” He makes us gradually and at length in our own persons, what He has been from eternity in Himself, what He is from our Baptism towards us, righteous. That

acceptableness, which He has ever had in the Father's sight, as being the reflection of the Father's perfections, He first imputes, then imparts to us.

This is what the text expresses; "As by one man's disobedience," says the Apostle, "many were made sinners, so by the obedience of One shall many be made righteous." Whether or no the phrase "by the obedience" means *through* or *in* Christ's obedience,—through the *merits*, as Romanists say, or in the *imputation*, as we may say, (about which is not the question here,)—so far is certain, that by that obedience, however operating, we are "made righteous;" made, not accounted merely. Christ, who is the Son by birth, makes us sons by adoption; Christ, who is "the righteous" in Himself, makes us righteous by communication, giving us first the name, then causing it to pass into the substance.

Now, over and above the evident meaning, to a common reader, of the phrase "*made* righteous" in the text, two circumstances may be mentioned as making it still plainer. In the original language, the word means not merely *made*, but *established* in righteousness. It is the same as is used by St. Peter, when he says, "If these things," faith, charity, and other graces, "be in you and abound, they *make* you," that is, *constitute, ensure* you as being "neither barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ." It is the word used also by St. James, when he says, that "the tongue *is*

so," becomes such, is in such a state, "among our members, that it defileth the whole body;" and again, that "whosoever will be a friend of the world, *is*," or is settled as "the enemy of God." Is the world's friend but *accounted* God's enemy? or is the tongue *accounted* a defilement? or are mature Christians but *accounted* fruitful in the knowledge of Christ? When, then, St. Paul says that we "become righteous" by Christ's obedience, he is speaking of our actual state through Christ, of that internal nature, frame, or character, which Christ gives us, nor gives only, but *constitutes* ours.

But, again, he parallels our privilege in Christ to our loss in Adam; "*as* by one man's disobedience," he says, "many were made sinners; *so* by the obedience of One shall many be made righteous." Now, who will deny that Adam's sin is both imputed and imparted to us? If any deny it, we call him a Pelagian. So we should *call* him, and justly; but how shall we *argue* with him, if we deal with the latter half of the verse, as he disposes of the former? We cannot take just so much as we will of a free interpretation; we may open the door to heresy, we cannot close it.

Though the text, then, were the only passage of Scripture adduceable, it would be clear, I think, that Christ's obedience, which is All-righteousness, does also operate righteousness in us, according to our measure.

But here another line of argument is taken, which will furnish matter for the present Lecture.

It is owned that Christians really *are* righteous, but not righteous *in the sense* in which Christ is righteous, but in a lower and different sense. Now if by this is merely meant that He has an incommunicable righteousness, as He has an incommunicable wisdom, holiness, and bountifulness, it is of course most true. None but He has infinite perfection in any thing. Yet He does impart to us a measure of these latter excellences notwithstanding, and in like manner He may impart to us of His righteousness. There is no controversy what righteousness means; and it is certainly an attribute which admits of imparting. All parties seem to allow that the word denotes what I have already intimated, what is *intrinsically* good, what admits of being contemplated and accepted as such by Almighty God. In this sense Christ is Righteousness in God's sight; He is the Well-beloved Son, in whom the Father is well-pleased, as being "the Brightness of His glory, and the express Image of His Person," "the unspotted Mirror of the power of God, and the Image of His goodness." Nothing can He *absolutely* delight in, but what is like Himself; hence He is said to "put no trust even in His servants, and to charge His Angels with folly." None but the Eternal Son, who is incommunicably like the Father, can be infinitely acceptable to Him or simply righteous. Yet in proportion as rational beings are like Him, or partake of Him, so are they really righteous; in proportion as God sees His Son in them, He is well-pleased with them. Righteous-

ness is but holiness regarded in its intrinsic worth or acceptableness, just as love, truth, and peace, are different names for holiness, as placed in different aspects; it is love, or truth, or holiness viewed relatively to God's judgment or approval of it; or, in words already used, it is the quality in love, truth, or holiness, of being intrinsically pleasing to Him. And being acceptableness, it is surely as capable of being conferred on man, as love, truth, or holiness; and that in fact it is so conferred, and conferred from and through the Eternal Son, is the literal and uniform declaration of Scripture. Not only is the *word* "righteous" applied to us, but the *idea* is again and again, in various ways, forced upon us. We read, for instance, of "God working in us that which is well-pleasing in His sight;" of Christ, "who is His image," "shining" and "living" in our hearts; of His "making us *accepted*" or *gracious* "in the Beloved;" and of His "*knowing what is the mind of the Spirit*" in our hearts, because "He *maketh intercession* for the saints *according to the way of God* <sup>1</sup>."

Such passages, I say, make it clear that acceptableness or graciousness is imparted to us as really as any other divine excellence; and if acceptableness be the same as righteousness, the *thing* as well as the *word* righteousness is ours in the same general sense in which it is Christ's. Christ's righteousness makes us righteous, because it *is*

<sup>1</sup> Heb. xiii. 21. 2 Cor. iv. 4. Eph. i. 6. Rom. viii. 27.



righteousness ; it imparts *itself*, and not something else. In other words, such texts show that the word has not two senses, according as it is applied to Christ or us, but one ; as St. John expressly declares, if we will listen to him, “He that doeth righteousness, is righteous, *even as* He is righteous.” This, however, is denied by the majority of Protestant divines, who grant indeed that we are made righteous, but not righteous as He is righteous, but in an entire different sense, as distinct from what is meant by His righteousness, as foresight or ingenuity, as possessed by brute animals, differs from the same properties when belonging to rational beings ; Christ’s righteousness having intrinsic excellence, ours, though the work of the Spirit, being supposed to have none. This they maintain, and as if distinctions would serve instead of proof, they lay down that there are two kinds of righteousness, the *righteousness of justification*, or intrinsic acceptableness, which is Christ’s only, and the *righteousness of sanctification*, which is the Christian’s<sup>1</sup>. Now, then, let us consider the principle of interpretation which such a distinction involves.

<sup>1</sup> *Justitia, alia justificationis, sanctificationis alia.* Chamier, de Justif. xxi. 17. § 5. It is deeply to be regretted that a work like Davenant’s de *Just. habit.* should have been written under the influence of the same theology. Yet with him it is in a great measure a matter of words. He lays it down as an axiom, that the words righteousness and just cannot be used

Considering, then, St. Paul has all through the chapter before us, been speaking of justification and righteousness simply in its higher sense, as sustaining God's judgment, as involving pardon, favour, acceptableness, praise, worth, a title to heaven, and the like, I do not see on what plea it can be urged, that all at once he makes the word stand for an obedience which is not thus intrinsically approvable. He has spoken of our "being justified by faith," "justified by His blood," of "the free gift being of many offences unto justification," of "the gift of righteousness," of "the righteousness of One," and of "justification of life;" and at the end of the chapter, of "grace reigning through righteousness unto eternal life;" can we suppose that just in one place, in this continuous argument, he should without notice use the word in a sense perfectly distinct? He says that Christ is our righteousness, and that thereby we are made righteous; why is this not to mean "Christ stands for our acceptableness before we have it, and then imparts it to us?" An intelligible argument, indeed, *may* be raised, whether justification means making or imputing righteous, but none, one would think, what just or righteous means in itself. In short, what reason is

except in that sense in which they belong to God, (i. e. to denote the highest possible perfection,) and *therefore* when applied to us they must have a different sense. He allows that in Christians righteousness is *begun*, but says it cannot be *called* righteousness till it is perfected, which it is not on earth.

there for the change, except the necessity of the theory making it?

Yet, in spite of this fundamental objection, this supposed distinction between the two senses of the word, is laid down as a great and observable canon of interpretation by one divine after another. In vain does St. Paul declare again and again, that we *are* righteous; the Continental Masters have ruled that we are not really so. They have argued that if we were really made righteous, Christ would cease to *be* our righteousness, and therefore we certainly are not really so made; which is much the same as arguing, that Christ must cease to be our "sanctification," because we are made holy, or that we are not made holy because He is our "sanctification;" in a word, that He in His infinite fulness cannot give without a loss, and we in our utter nothingness cannot be in the receipt of benefits without thereby ceasing to be dependent.

It is, perhaps, not too much to say that the whole structure of this modern system is made up of reasonings such as these, and interpretations in conformity; and that it dare not trust itself freely to any text of Scripture,—dare not without the protection of some antecedent principle, and that an assumed one. For instance, St. Paul bids us "yield our members as instruments of righteousness unto God;" he tells us we are "servants" or slaves "of righteousness," that "the kingdom of God is righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;"

he speaks of "the fruits of our righteousness," of "ministers of righteousness," of "the new man being created in righteousness and true holiness," of "the fruit of the Spirit being in all goodness, righteousness, and truth<sup>1</sup>;" yet all these testimonies, and many more, whether found in him or in the other Apostles, to the doctrine of God's giving us really what He begins by imputing to us, are, I say, put aside summarily by the gratuitous position, that righteousness *cannot* in such texts mean what it means, perhaps, the verse before and the verse after.

Again: we read of "righteous Abel;" we are told that "Noah was a just man, and perfect in his generations;" that Job was "perfect and upright," that Lot was "righteous," that Moses was "faithful in all God's house;" that Elias was "a righteous man," that Daniel was "righteous" and "greatly beloved," that Zacharias and Elizabeth were "both righteous," that Joseph was "a just man," that Simeon was "just and devout," that Joseph of Arimathea was "a good man and a just," that St. John the Baptist was "a just man and an holy," that Cornelius was "a just man, and one that feareth God," that "the righteous shall shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father," that "the righteous" shall go "into life eternal," that there shall

<sup>1</sup> Rom vi. 13, 18; xiv. 17. 2 Cor. ix. 10; xi. 15. Eph. iv. 24.

be “a resurrection of the just,” that “the Law lieth not against a just man,” that a “Bishop must be sober, just, holy, temperate.” We read of the “spirits of the just made perfect,” of “the righteous scarcely being saved,” and of “him who is just becoming more just<sup>1</sup> ;” and when we would apply these statements to the great evangelical canon, “The *just* shall live by faith,” as interpreting the word “just” in it, we are forbidden, on the arbitrary assumption that they speak of a sort of Jewish righteousness, though some of them relate to times before the giving of the Law; or that they mean Christ’s righteousness, though containing other epithets which are personal.

Again: when our Lord says to the scribe who had rehearsed to Him the commandments, “This do and thou shalt live,” it is replied that He spoke in a sort of irony.

Again, when He says, unless our righteousness exceed that of the Scribes and Pharisees, we shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven<sup>2</sup>; and pronounces them blessed “who hunger and thirst after righteousness,” and who “are persecuted for righteousness’ sake,” and bids us “seek the kingdom of God and His righteousness;” it is sometimes openly,

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxiii. 35. Heb. xi. 4. Gen. vii. 9. Job i. 1. Num. xii. 7. James v. 16. Ez. xiv. 14. Dan. ix. 23. Luke i. 6. Matt. i. 19. Luke ii. 25. Mark vi. 20. Acts x. 22. Matt. xiii. 43; xxv. 46. Luke xiv. 14. 1 Tim. i. 9. Tit. i. 8. Heb. xii. 23. 1 Pet. iv. 18. Rev. xxii. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. v. 20.

often by implication answered, (I hardly can get myself to use the words,) that all this was spoken before St. Paul wrote.

Again: when St. Paul, who is thus appealed to, says expressly, that “the righteousness of the Law *is* fulfilled in us,” then an appeal is made to Luther, who laid it down as a first principle, that justification without inherent righteousness is the criterion of a standing or falling church; or to our Articles, as if they too (which is quite otherwise) were committed to so novel and unauthorized a theory.

Again: when St. Paul says, “I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me,” this is supposed to mean all things except fulfilling the Law; and when he says, in another place, that “love *is* the fulfilling of the Law,” and that love is not only attainable, but a duty, we are answered by a distinction, that one degree of love is the fulfilling of the Law, another the Christian grace so called.

Again: when Hezekiah says, “Remember now, O Lord, I beseech Thee, how I have walked before Thee in truth and with a perfect heart, and have done that which is good in Thy sight;” or Nehemiah, “Remember me, O my God, concerning this, and wipe not out my good deeds that I have done for the house of my God, and for the offices thereof<sup>1</sup>.” we are told in answer, that it is self-righteous and a denial of the merits of Christ, to say that we

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah xxxviii. 3. Neh. xiii. 14.

can do any thing really good, even with the grace of Christ, any thing in consideration of which God will look mercifully upon us.

Again: St. Paul speaks of things "just," of "virtue" and of "praise," of providing "things honest *in the sight of the Lord*," of being "acceptable to God<sup>1</sup>;" but in vain does he thus vary his expressions, as if by way of commenting on the word "righteous," and printing upon our minds this one idea of inherent acceptableness;—no, this has become a forbidden notion; it must not even enter the thoughts, though an Evangelist plead and a Prophet threaten ever so earnestly.

Again: "Work" must have two senses, for though we are bid to work out our salvation, God working in us, this cannot really mean "Work out your salvation through God working in you;" *else* justification would be, not of grace, nor of faith, but of works of the Law.

"Reward" has two senses; for the reward which Scripture bids us labour for, cannot be a reward in the sense we commonly use the word; it is not really a reward, but is so called to animate our exertions and console us in despondency<sup>2</sup>.

Many other reasons are offered for "righteous," and kindred words having two senses in Scripture, but all of the same kind; for instance, "To him that worketh not, but believeth on Him that justi-

<sup>1</sup> Phil. iv. 8. 2 Cor. viii. 21. Rom. xiv. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Calvin. Justit. iii. 18. § 3.

fieth the ungodly, his faith is *counted* to him for righteousness;" since, then, God justifies those who are ungodly *when* justified, therefore they are unrighteous ever *after*, nay, not really godly, but only accounted so<sup>1</sup>.

Again: "Righteousness," though attributed to us, cannot mean any thing in us, because the Jews sought a justifying righteousness, *not* "through Christ, *but* by the" external "works of the Law;" and therefore if we seek justifying righteousness solely from Christ, and not at all from works in their own strength, and from inward obedience, not external, we shall stumble and fall also.

Another argument is drawn from St. Paul's saying that "righteousness" is "*without* the Law;" for it is argued, since our righteousness is without the Law, it is without the Law for justification, and with the Law for sanctification.

<sup>1</sup> "All they whom God justifies," says Mr. Scott, "are *considered* as *ungodly*. True faith is indeed the effect of regeneration, an important part of *true* godliness, and inseparable from all other holy exercises of the soul towards God; yet the believer, considered as he is in himself, according to the Holy Law, is liable to condemnation as ungodly, and is justified solely and entirely, as viewed in Christ according to the Gospel." Essays, On Justif. That is to say, not only are we to believe that Christ accounts us just without making us just, but that He accounts us ungodly when He has made us godly. When are these conventional representations to end? When are we to escape from the city of Shadows, in which Luther would bewilder the citizens of the Holy Jerusalem?



Again: "Righteous" cannot be applicable to us in the sense of justifying, because St. Paul "counted all things but dung," that he might "win Christ, and be found in Him not having his own righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is of the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith." If, then, the Apostle rejects the righteousness of works done in his own strength, before faith, and without grace, as worthless, and desires a righteousness of God, it is supposed to follow that that new righteousness cannot consist in obedience, *though* done in consciousness of its manifold imperfections, and in faith, and by the grace of Christ.

Again: it is argued that justifying righteousness cannot be of the Law, because if a man "offend it in one point, he is guilty of all;" that is, since St. James says, that *without love*, we offend the Law in many points, therefore, with love, we cannot fulfil it consistently, though imperfectly, like Zacharias.

Lastly: "Righteousness" is said to have two senses, because St. Paul declares, that *as* "Christ was made sin for us who had known no sin," *so* "we are made the righteousness of God in Him;" for, it is argued, since when we *were* unrighteous, Christ *was* imputed to us for righteousness; therefore, when Christ *has been* imputed to us for righteousness, we *shall* ever *be* unrighteous still.

Such is the nature of the arguments on which

this *distinction* in the sense of Scripture words is maintained;—on which two perfectly separate senses are given to the word “righteousness;” justification is made one gift, sanctification another; deliverance from guilt one work of God, deliverance from sin another;—on which, reward is supposed not to mean really reward, praise not really praise, availableness not really availableness, worth not really worth, acceptableness not really acceptableness;—which is considered to show, that none but St. Paul may speak of “working out our salvation;” none but St. Peter, of “Baptism saving us;” none but St. John, of “doers of righteousness being righteous;” that when St. Paul says, “*all* faith,” he excludes true faith; and when St. James says, “*not* by faith *only*,” he includes nothing else; that it is *not* rash to say, that justification is therefore not by works, because it is by faith, though it *is* rash to say that Christ is therefore not God, because He is man; and though a sin, as it surely is, to infer that Christ is not God, because *Scripture* calls the Father the only God, yet no sin to argue that works cannot justify, because *Luther* says that faith only justifies.

Surely, all this is very arbitrary; and though not so intended by the multitude of persons who give into it, yet in itself very disrespectful (to say the least) to the sacred text. It is in fact far more than is openly claimed by the most strenuous advo-

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiii. 2. James ii. 24.

cate of the right of private judgment ; being nothing less than to subject Scripture to a previously formed system ; for no one can maintain that such a system is really gained from it. It is to make Scripture not a volume of instruction to which we must reverently draw near, but a magazine of texts in behalf of our own opinions ; and no maintainer of private judgment has gone these lengths. Let any candid person decide why in the passages just now quoted, two distinct senses are assigned to the word “righteousness ;” because Scripture intimates it, or because a particular human system requires it. Such modes of interpretation then call for a very serious protest from all who are jealous of the pure and unmutilated *sense*, as well as the letter of the Bible. It is but a Jewish blindness to count syllables, while we are heedless about their import ; to guard the text from addition or diminution, yet not from glosses ; to be busy in versions, yet helpless in interpretation ; to be keepers of a treasure, yet not enjoy it. Scripture is as a sealed book to the uninstructed, though translated into every language under heaven ; and its words surely have their own particular and absolute meaning over and above the accident of their being in Greek, or Latin, or English :—and as all this, it seems to me, is forgotten in the scheme of doctrine under review, I shall endeavour in the rest of this Lecture to enforce it.

I say, then, that the words of Scripture, as of

every other book, have their own meaning, which must be sought in order to be found. St. Paul does not use his words indiscriminately; he does not mean by "righteous" at one time really, at another nominally righteous, at random and without a reason. If it be as great an error as it is often now thought, to confuse these supposed distinct senses of the word, it is an equal improbability that St. Paul should have given it senses so distinct. Words stand for one idea, not two; if the same word seems to have several, these are really connected together. The words of Scripture were appropriated to their respective senses by their *writers*; they had a meaning before we approached them, and they will have that same meaning whether we find it out or not. And our business is to find the real meaning, not to impose what will serve for a meaning. Abstract antecedent reasonings will never help us to the real meaning; systems of the schools are not comments on the text. The minds and the meaning of the inspired writers were deeper than ours are. Such remarks will be called truisms, yet they almost immediately apply to the subject in hand; for what but neglect of them can account, for instance, for the common interpretation of such verses as the text? When St. Paul says that we are *made righteous*, what but antecedent and established theories could be strong enough to persuade men that "*righteous*" does not imply acceptableness, or else that "*made*" means only accounted?

This adherence to modern systems gives occasion to two great faults in interpreting Scripture.

1. It encourages the practice of arguing out a sense for its terms, from the particular context in which they may happen to occur. Of course, to consult the context is a great advance towards the true method of interpretation, but it is not enough. In Scripture, as elsewhere, words stand for certain objects, and are used with reference to those objects, and must be explained by them. They may severally have many shades of meaning, but these, though manifold, are of one family, and but varieties of one meaning, if we could find it. In this or that passage where the word occurs, it may disclose its one full sense more or less; but the degree in which it is brought out by the context, depends on the accident of those other words with which it there stands connected. Therefore, I say we shall never arrive at its real and complete meaning, by its particular context; which generally comes in contact with but two or three points, or one aspect of it. What would be thought of the commentator, (to recur to a former illustration) who decided that *Psalmist* meant *father*, because the Psalmist wept over his *son*; or *shepherd*, because he rescued a *lamb* from the lion and bear; or *king*, because he was a type of the *Messiah*? Yet, in this way the sacred terms of the Apostles are treated; and not only by those who interpret on a theory, but by men who are clearsighted enough to disown the

bondage of modern systems, or too heedless or self-willed to learn them. They are robbed of their hidden treasures, and frittered away among a multitude of meanings as uncertain, meagre, and discordant, as the one true sense, like a great luminary, is clear and gracious. *Righteousness* sometimes is to mean God's strict justice, sometimes His merciful acceptance, sometimes superhuman obedience, sometimes man's holiness, without any attempt at harmonizing these distinct notions; *faith* is trust, or obedience, or conscience, or implicit assent; *justifying* is used by St. Paul for declaring righteous, by St. James for evidencing that God has declared us righteous; the *Law* is sometimes the moral law, sometimes the ceremonial, sometimes the Christian. What account is to be given of such changes? none is attempted. Yet, I repeat, surely, if a word means so many things, they are to be considered as but modifications of one and the same idea, according as it is viewed; and our business is to find out, as far as may be, what it is which admits of such diversified application. Our business is, if so be, to fix that one real sense before our mind's eye, not to loiter or lose our way in the outward text of Scripture, but to get through and beyond the letter into the spirit. Our duty is to be intent on things, not on names and terms; to associate words with their objects instead of measuring them by their definitions; to speak as having eyes, and as if to those who have eyes, not as groping our way

in the dark by intellectual conceptions, acts of memory, and efforts of reason; in short, when we speak of justification or faith, to *have* a meaning and grasp an idea, though at different times it may be variously developed, or variously presented, as the profile or full face in a picture.

And here, let me observe, is the especial use of the Fathers as expositors of Scripture; they do what no examination of the particular context can do satisfactorily, acquaint us with the *things* Scripture speaks of. They tell us, not what words mean etymologically, or philosophically, or classically, but what they do mean actually, what they do mean in the Christian Church and in theology. It is an objection frequently made to the orthodox interpretation of certain passages, that they *need* not mean what they are said to mean, as far as the wording goes; that there is nothing in the passage itself to force such a meaning upon it. For instance; when Christ is called the Son of God, this (it is objected) does not *prove* His divinity, because we are sons also; and when He declares that "He and the Father are one," this *need* only refer to unity of will, as Paul and Apollos were "one;" and when He says, "I am with *you* always," He *may* mean the Apostles only, or at least only those, and all those who have living faith; and when He says, He gives us "His flesh to eat," this *admits* of being figuratively taken for the benefits of His death generally; and when St. Paul says, that "in Adam

all die," it is enough to suppose he means "after the pattern of Adam," as Pelagius thought; and when he says, that we are "justified by faith," the abstract word "justified" only means, and therefore St. Paul need only mean "accounted righteous." Let us grant all this for argument's sake;—certainly it would tell against us, if we professed to argue from the mere context; it might prove we were bad reasoners;—but is there not also a further question, and one more to the point, not what the sacred text *may* mean, but what it *does* mean? Does the word *Psalmist* necessarily involve father, shepherd, and king? yet, I suppose, the most minute measurer of terms will grant "the sweet Psalmist of Israel" was all three; and in like manner, if it so happen, other words too may mean more than they need mean grammatically or logically; and what they mean may be determinable historically, that is, by the records of antiquity, as we explain words and statements relative to matters of this world. If no word is to be taken to mean more than its logical definition, we shall never get beyond abstract knowledge, for it cannot possibly carry its own explanation with it. They who wish to dispense with Antiquity, should, in consistency, go further, and attempt to learn a language without grammar and dictionary. This, then, is the use of the Fathers in interpreting Scripture;—those who go by the particular context, proceed argumentatively, but come to no conclusion; those who go by scholastic



systems come to a conclusion, but without sure premises; but those who consult Antiquity, gain at once an authority and a guide.

2. I have said the context does not do justice to the sacred terms of Scripture; so far from it, without a knowledge of them it cannot be interpreted itself; and it will to a certainty be explained away, unless we assign the right meaning to them. Acquaintance with the subject can alone give meaning to the connective particles, the turn of the sentence, and the cast of the argument. What can St. Paul be supposed to mean by his contrasts, arguments *à fortiori*, or climaxes, by those who have no clear understanding what he is speaking of? What does he mean by "like as," and "much more," and "not only," and "even," in the judgment of those who have dim and partial notions of what justification means, or the law, or righteousness, or the spirit, or faith, or works? It must, I should think, come home to most thoughtful persons, if not from their own experience, at least on consulting commentaries, that we very little enter into the course and substance of the Apostle's teaching. The utmost attempt commonly made is to comprehend an isolated sentence here and there, and we make the most of our interpretation, whatever its merits, from its rarity. What do the average of those readers, who profess they see Scripture with a clearness which the mass of men have not,—what do they understand by "Who was delivered

for our *offences*, and raised again for our *justification*?" or "While we were yet *sinner*s, Christ died for us; *much more* then being now *justified* by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him?" or "The Spirit is life, *because* of righteousness?" or "Ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus, *for* as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ?"

There are, doubtless, difficulties in Scripture in proportion to its depth; but I am speaking of a mode of interpretation which does not feel depth nor suspect difficulty. And this contented ignorance not only implies a very superficial state of mind, because it is contented, but great indifference towards the sacred writers. Surely, it is not only shallow, but profane, thus to treat the argumentative structure of an inspired volume. If "much more," and "not only," and the like, be what this system supposes them to be, then the Apostles give less force and meaning to words than ordinary reasoners. On this explanation, St. Paul must be supposed to use his contrasts and analogies as rhetorical ornaments, rather than as matters of fact and serious reasoning. This is in fact the conclusion which is forced on those who are more consecutive and daring thinkers than the generality of men. They seem to allow that St. Paul does abound in mere oratory or poetry; and having so decided, no wonder they go on to look upon the science of Catholic doctrine also as a great system of words

for things, a vast labyrinth of dogmas without meaning, of reasonings without conclusions, of maxims without point, of logical compensations of logical difficulties, of shadow opposed to shadow, one against another. I am sure a large part of Hooker's teaching, for instance, about the Trinity, the Incarnation, and the Sacraments, appears to acute reasoners of the Protestant school, to be a mere arbitrary and artificial arrangement of notions. Nay, that they do so consider St. Paul's inspired pages will appear from the remarks of some of them, who have been desirous to relieve Christianity of the burden thence attaching to it. This they have done, as they think, by surrendering his arguments, as if not falling under the province of inspiration, and being fair subjects for criticism to this searching and sifting age, as it is called;—searching and sifting, (that is,) in truth, because it shuts out the sun, gropes about in the dark, and has the fitting fruit of its wilfulness in never grasping what it professes to be searching after. But supposing, for argument's sake, his reasonings are separable from his conclusions, and he is only inspired in the latter, yet, is it indeed come to this, that, in order to defend the gospel, an Apostle must be supposed to indulge in words and arguments which mean nothing? Is one who is greater than man with inspiration, less than man without it? Are his antitheses, and amplifications, and similitudes, are his words of emphasis and weight, such as "light,"

“power,” “glory,” “riches,” “height and depth,” “inward working,” “spirit,” “mystery,” and, “Christ indwelling,” to stand for nothing? Are they random words uttered for effect, or from a sort of habit, as sacred names are now used by sinners to make their language tell? Are his expressions glowing, not because his subject is great, but because his temperament was sanguine? Is he antithetical, not because he treats of things discordant, but because he was taught in the schools of Tarsus? or does he repeat their words, not from the poverty of human language, but the slenderness of his vocabulary? Yet this age is disposed, out of mere consideration for St. Paul, to adopt the latter alternative, choosing rather that he should speak beyond or beside his own meaning than its comprehension; so that it has become a fashion almost to cease looking for any particular meaning in discourses, which the Angels desire to look into. To acquiesce in a confined idea of them, has been thought a sign of deference rather than of neglect; as if to seek more were unfair to the great Apostle,—I had almost said, ungenerous.

Thus a popular writer protects the Inspired Teacher of the Nations, by the following considerations.—“St. Paul, I am apt to believe, has been sometimes accused of inconclusive reasoning, by our mistaking that for reasoning which was only intended for illustration. He is not to be read as a man, whose sole persuasion of the truth of what he

taught, always or solely depended upon the views under which he represented it in his writings;" otherwise, of course, his faith would have been illogical. He continues: "Taking for granted the certainty of his doctrine, as resting upon the revelation that had been imparted to him, he exhibits it frequently to the conception of his readers, *under images and allegories, in which, if an analogy may be perceived, or even sometimes a poetic resemblance be found, it is all perhaps that is required*<sup>1</sup>." He is evidently afraid lest Christianity, as it stands integrally in the Bible, should fail under the ordeal of this educated age<sup>2</sup>.

Elsewhere, he thus remarks:—"Their doctrines," the Apostles', "came to them by revelation, properly so called; yet in propounding these doctrines

<sup>1</sup> Paley's *Horæ Paul.* vi. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Again: "There is such a thing as a peculiar word or phrase cleaving, as it were, to the memory of a writer or speaker, and presenting itself to his utterance at every turn. When we observe this, we call it a *cant* word, or a *cant* phrase. It is a natural effect of habit; and would appear more frequently than it does, had not the rules of good writing taught the ear to be offended with the iteration of the same sound, and oftentimes caused us to reject, on that account, the words which offered itself first to our recollection. With a writer who, like St. Paul, *either knew not these rules, or disregarded them*, such words will not be avoided. The truth is, an example of this kind runs through several of his Epistles, and in the Epistle before us," to the Ephesians, "abounds; and that is in the word *riches*, used *metaphorically as an augmentative of the idea to which it happens to be subjoined*."—*Ibid.* 2.

in their writings or discourses, they were wont to illustrate, support, and enforce them by such *analogies, arguments, and considerations* as their own thoughts suggested. . . . The doctrine" [of the call of the Gentiles] "must be received; but it is not necessary, in order to defend Christianity, to defend the *propriety* of every *comparison*, or the *validity* of every *argument*, which the Apostle has brought into the discussion<sup>1</sup>."

These conclusions, I doubt not, will be painful to many a man who adopts the principles from which they follow. For we have been detained by circumstances, or, as I may say, frozen, in an intermediate state between Protestant premises and their rightful inferences. Those circumstances are now, after several centuries, dissolving, and we are gradually gaining a free course, and may choose our haven for ourselves. We must either go forward on a voyage where we can discover only barrenness, or return home to our ancient country, and the sepulchres of the prophets. To see where we shall end, if we go forward, may, through God's mercy, persuade us to go back.

To conclude: what has been said concerning the interpretation of the sacred terms of Scripture, to which the text gave rise, has come to this; that though from the depth of those terms the particular context is no measure of their meaning, and there-

<sup>1</sup> Part. iii. ch. 2. fin.

fore affords no criterion whether we have attained it; yet, that it affords a test of what they do *not* mean, as often as a proposed interpretation makes it inconsistent with itself; and further, that while external aid is necessary to determine their full sense, it must, to be an aid, be, if possible, derived from persons who had means of knowing it, not from speculations and theories which can but guess at it.

## LECTURE VI.

---

### ON THE GIFT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

---

2 Cor. vi. 16.

“Ye are the Temple of the Living God; as God hath said,  
I will dwell in them, and walk in them.”

JUSTIFICATION, being an act of Divine Mercy exerted towards the soul, does not leave it as it found it,—cannot but make it what it was not before, as has been shown at length. It stands to reason that a soul that is justified, is not in the same state as if it had not been justified,—is not in the state of others which are not justified. No one would assert that one who is justified is in all respects the same as another who is not; even a professed Antinomian will generally allow that he has certain spiritual feelings, as he falsely calls them, or experiences, or an assurance, or the consciousness of renouncing merit, to distinguish him from those who remain in a state of wrath.

We know well what that state of wrath consists



in, or what is the formal character and condition of those who are in it; disobedience, an evil heart of unbelief, hatred of the truth, guilt, fear of judgment to come, hardness of heart; such as these are the constituting parts of that state, and go to make up or define it. Now, on the other hand, what is the state of a justified man? or in what does justification *consist*? This is the question which is now more exactly to be treated, as was proposed in a former place; and it is one of no small importance.

As far as the *name* is concerned, there is a general agreement among all parties; it is called "righteousness." But this is not the question; nor, again, what the *meaning* of the name is, which all allow to be equivalent to acceptableness, or acceptable obedience, though one school of opinion puts a second sense upon that word, and understands it also to mean an obedience, which is short of acceptable, or a righteousness of sanctification. Nor is it now the question what is meant by justification, which some take for accounting, others for being made righteous. But the question is, what is *that* which is *named* righteousness, (whether *only* named, as faith may be "*counted* for righteousness," or perfectly so as Christ's obedience, or partially as our own); what is that object or thing, what is it in a man, which God seeing there, therefore calls him righteous; what is the state in which a justified person is, or that which constitutes him righteous

in God's sight; just as one might ask what is really meant when it is said that a man is alive, what is the thing denoted by Scripture in saying that God "breathed into Adam the *breath* of life," the sense of the word *breath* being indisputable.

Now Luther, as we have seen, considers it to be Christ's obedience imputed; the Roman Church considers it to be the new and spiritual principle imparted to us by the Holy Ghost. But before entering upon the subject, I wish to insist that there really must be, as I had said, in every one who is justified, some such token or substance of his justification; I insist upon it, because many persons will try to slip away from so plain a truth. They so greatly dread our priding ourselves on any thing that is good in us, that one cannot assert that there are distinctions between the justified state and the state of nature, without being at once accused of treating these as meritorious causes; therefore, I will insist on the point at the hazard of being tedious.

It is certain, then, that all men are not justified; some are, some are not; what is it they differ in? To justify is to *account* or *declare* righteous; this is God's act; this is a movement of the Divine Mind, and altogether external to the *subject* of that justification. If the only real difference between a justified man and a man unjustified, be Almighty God's thoughts concerning him, then those who are justified are justified from eternity, for God sees

the end from the beginning. They are in a justified state even from the hour of their birth; before their conversion, while they are wallowing in all sin and unholiness, they are justified, if justification be an act of the Divine Mind and nothing more,—a conclusion which has before now been admitted. Yet, unless we go these lengths, we must allow that there is a certain distinctive state of soul to which the designation of righteousness belongs. What, then, is the criterion within us, which God sees there, (His giving surely, but still given) the seal and signature of His elect, which He accepts now, which He will acknowledge at the last day?

In asking, then, what is our righteousness, I do not mean what is its *original source*, for this is God's mercy; nor what is its *meritorious cause*, for this is the life, and above all the death of Christ; nor what is the *instrument* of it, for this (I would maintain) is Holy Baptism; nor what is the *entrance* into it, for this is regeneration; nor what the *first privilege* of it, for this is pardon; nor what is the *ultimate fruit*, for this is everlasting life. I am not inquiring about any thing past, or any thing future, or any thing on God's part, but of something present and inward. We should not say that animal life consisted in being born, or in having parents, or in breathing, or in sensation, or in strength, or in a certain period of years, or in God's will, or in God's attributes, or in God's knowledge of us. We should

feel that nothing past, or to come, or external, could be a fit account of that which we call animal life, and that all answers so framed were beside the mark. It would be intelligible, for instance, to say that life consisted in the presence of the soul; but whether we said this or any thing else, in any case we should fix on something in us, not out of us. And in like manner, when I ask what is that, called righteousness, which God first clothes us with as with a robe, then looks upon and accepts, I do not ask why God so looks upon it, but *what* it is He looks upon.

1. This being the case, we may pronounce that Luther's answer to the question, viz., that Christ's obedience imputed to us is our righteousness, is in itself no answer at all, and needs explanation before it will apply. Properly speaking, I suppose it means, not that Christ's obedience imputed, but that the imputation of His obedience, is our righteousness. Christ's obedience in the days of His flesh centuries since, must be brought near to the soul of the individual; therefore that present applying or imputing of His obedience must be meant, when it is called our righteousness, not what is past. But that applying or imputing is the act of God; and the question now before us, is, not what is God's act in justifying, but what the state of the justified soul. It is perfectly intelligible to say that Christ's obedience is the procuring, or the meritorious cause of our righteousness; but to say that our state of

righteousness is Christ's having obeyed the Law eighteen hundred years since, if literally taken, is like saying that our animal life consists in the creation of Adam, or that the pangs of guilt consist in the fall of Satan, which are words without meaning.

For the same reason, it is no answer to the present question to say that a state of justification consists in the forgiveness of sins, or in acceptance, or in adoption, all these being God's acts, and as little in point here as if I said that obedience was divine aid.

Again : if it be laid down that our justification consists in union with Christ, or reconciliation with God, this is an intelligible and fair answer ; and then the question will arise, what is *meant* by union with Christ. It may or may not be possible to explain it ; if we consider Scripture to be silent on this point, then we shall say that justification consists in an *unknown, unrevealed, mysterious* union with Christ ; if we do not allow that there is a mystery, then we shall be bound to say what that union does consist in.

For the same reason, to say with the Romanists that justification consists in spiritual renovation, whether correct or incorrect, is perfectly intelligible. It is a real answer.

And those who say that it is Christ's obedience, seem to have felt this ; for when pressed, they have sometimes said, that faith is the discriminating

mark of justification, or that in which it consists. But for the most part only *when* they were pressed; for though such an answer, whether correct or not, is clear and apposite, yet they seem to have feared that it was all one with saying that faith had merit, or an intrinsic expiatory power in the remission of sins. At the same time, this has not hindered others from so deciding<sup>1</sup>; and as it is the only serviceable answer which I can find on the Lutheran side of the question, I shall make use of it.

These then are the two views which at first sight come into consideration, whether on the one hand our state of justification, or righteousness in God's sight, consist in faith or in renovation.

Now, however intelligible each of these answers

<sup>1</sup> "The difference betwixt the justification and obedience required by the Old and New Covenant, doth not consist as the Bishop" [Beveridge] "saith it is, in this, that, in the first obedience in our own persons was required as absolutely necessary; in the second obedience in our surety, is accepted as completely sufficient; but in this, that whereas the Old Law required perfect obedience, in order to our justification, allowing no pardon for sins committed, but having all under the curse, who 'continues not in all things written in the Law to do them, the New Covenant,' *requires only faith* in the blood of Christ, for the remission of our past sins . . . What interpretation of the Apostle's words can be more uncouth and unsound than this, 'Faith is imputed to us for righteousness,' that is, it is not faith, but Christ's active righteousness, which is imputed to us for righteousness?"—Whitby, Discourse on Imputed Righteousness.

may be, neither will be found sufficient and final. I mean, without giving judgment between them, they do not seem to pursue, and, I conceive, they do not pursue, the inquiry so far as they might; they do not trace up the criterion of a justified state to its simplest and most elementary form. When Faith is said to be the inward principle of acceptance, the question rises, what gives to faith its acceptableness? Why is faith more acceptable than unbelief? can we give no reason at all for it? can we conceive unbelief being appointed as the token, instrument, state, or condition (it matters not here which word we use) of justification? Surely not; faith is acceptable as having a something in it, which unbelief has not; that something, what is it? It must be God's grace, if God's grace act *in* the soul, and not merely externally, as in the way of Providence. If it acts in us, and has a presence in us, when we have faith, then the having that grace or that presence, and not faith, which is its result, must be the real token, the real state of a justified man.

Again: if we say that justification consists in a supernatural quality imparted to the soul by God's grace, as the Romanists say, then, in like manner, the question arises, is this quality all that is in us of heaven? does not the grace itself, as an immediate divine power or presence, dwell in the hearts which are gifted with this renovating principle? It may

or it may not ; but if it does, then surely its possession is really our justification, and not renewal, or the principle of renewal.

And thus by tracing farther back the lines of thought on which these apparently discordant views are placed, they are made to converge ; they converge, that is, supposing there to be vouchsafed to us, an inward divine presence, of which both faith and spiritual renovation are fruits. If such a presence be not vouchsafed, then certainly faith on the one hand, renovation on the other, are the ultimate elements to which our state of righteousness can be respectively referred in the two theologies. But if it be, neither Protestant nor Romanist ought to refuse to admit, and while admitting to agree with the other, that the presence of the Holy Ghost shed abroad in our hearts, the Author both of faith and of renewal, this is really that which makes us righteous, and that our righteousness is the possession of that presence.

2. So much is gained from the views of the contending parties ; next, I observe, in corroboration of the conjectural inference to which they have led us, that justification actually *is* ascribed in Scripture to the agency of the Holy Spirit, and that immediately, neither faith nor renewal intervening. For instance, St. Peter speaks of our being “elect through sanctification,” the consecration “of the Spirit, *unto*,” that is, in order to “obedience and *sprinkling of the blood* of Jesus Christ,” that is, the Holy Ghost



is given us unto, or in order to renovation and justification. Again: we are said by St. Paul to be “washed, sanctified, and *justified*, in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and by the *Spirit of our God*.” The same Apostle says, “Ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear, but ye have received the *Spirit of adoption*, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.” Again: “The law of the *Spirit of life* hath made me free from the law of sin and *death*.” Again: Christ says, “It is the *Spirit* that giveth life<sup>1</sup>,” *life* being the peculiar attribute or state of “the *just*,” as St. Paul, and the prophet Habakkuk before him, declare. These passages taken together, to which others might be added from a former Lecture, show that justification, is wrought by the power of the Spirit, or rather by His presence within us. And this being the real state of a justified man, faith and renewal are both present also, but as fruits of it;—faith, because it is said, “We through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith;” and renewal, because in another passage, “renewal of the Holy Ghost” is made equivalent to “being justified by His grace.”

Such is the doctrine of Scripture, which our Church plainly acknowledges, as is evident from the following passages from her formularies. In the 13th Article, for instance, which I have already cited, what in the title are called “works before

<sup>1</sup> 1 Pet. i. 2. 1 Cor. vi. 11. Rom. viii. 2. 15. John vi. 63. Gal. v. 15. Tit. iii. 5—7.

justification," are in what follows called "works done before the *grace* of Christ, and the *inspiration of His Spirit*;" that is, justification may fitly be called an "inspiration of the Spirit of Christ," or a spiritual presence. Again, in the Baptismal Service: in which we pray God that the child to be baptized may "receive remission of his sins," which surely implies justification, "*by spiritual regeneration*," which is surely the gift of the Spirit. The Homilies accord; in which we are told, by way of comment upon St. Paul's words, "Who rose again for our *justification*," that Christ "rose again to send down *His Holy Spirit* to rule in our hearts, *to endow us with perfect righteousness*;" and that in this way David's words in the 85th Psalm are fulfilled, "Truth hath sprung out of the earth, and righteousness hath looked down from heaven," in that "from the earth is the Everlasting Verity, God's Son, risen to life, and *the true righteousness of the Holy Ghost*, looking out of heaven, and in most liberal largess dealt upon all the world." Justifying righteousness, then, consists in the coming and presence of the Holy Ghost within us <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> This dependence of justification on the gift of the Spirit, is the doctrine of Protestant Divines of very different schools of Theology, *e. g.*

Baxter:—"Though most Protestants say that justification is a sentence of God, they are not agreed what that sentence is. . . . Some think, &c. . . . Others say that by a sentence is meant God's secret mental estimation. Mr. Lawson noteth that

3. But further, Scripture expressly declares that righteousness is a definite inward gift, while at the same time it teaches that it is not any mere quality

(as all confess that God hath no voice but a created voice, and therefore useth not words as we, unless what Christ as man may do in that we know not; so,) His *sentence* is nothing but His declaration that He esteemeth us, pardoned and just in title, *which is principally, if not only, by his execution*, and taking off all penalties of sense and loss, and using us as pardoned in title; and so that *the giving of His Spirit is His very sentence of justification* in this life, as it is His declaration as aforesaid. . . . There is much truth in most of the foresaid opinions inclusively, and much falsehood in their several exclusions of all the rest, unless their quarrel be only *de nomine*, which of all these is fitliest called justification. . . . There is no doubt that God doth esteem them just, *that are first made just*, and no other, because He erreth not. . . . and that God doth begin such execution [of His sentence] in this life, and that *His giving the Spirit* is thus *His principal pardoning and justifying act*, and yet that this is but part, and not the whole of our present executive pardon, and that glorification in this sense is the highest and noblest justification or pardon.”—*Life of Faith*, p. 3. ch. 8. The whole passage is worth consulting.

Waterland speaks of the operation of the Spirit as the *efficient* cause, but the general sense is evidently the same:—“The *Holy Ghost* is here to be considered *as the immediate efficient cause* [of justification]; for proof of which, we need not go farther than our Lord’s own words, that ‘except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God,’ which is as much as to say, he cannot have a title to salvation, cannot be justified.”—*On Justification*, p. 434. “The merits of Christ *applied* in Baptism *by the Spirit*, and received by a lively faith, *complete our justification* for the time being.” p. 440.

of mind, whether faith or holiness; as I shall now proceed to show.

By a gift I mean a thing given. Now, there are four words<sup>1</sup> used in Scripture to describe the special abiding gift of the Gospel, which either is, or at least includes justification, nay, is expressly said to be justification, and they all signify a thing given, not a mere giving;—not a favour, (as if we should say, “it is a great *mercy* we are saved,” that is, an act, display, proof of mercy,) but as indeed the word gift means in English, a possession; as when you say a man has the gift of languages, it is a faculty in him; whereas you would not say that popularity was a gift, which is something external, but rather the talent of becoming popular, or influence is the gift; nor would you say acceptance was a gift, but acceptableness.

For instance, in Rom. v. 17., we read, “They that receive the abundance of grace, and of the *gift*<sup>2</sup> of righteousness, shall reign in life by One, Jesus Christ.” The word *gift* here used certainly must mean a thing given; implying that the righteousness of justification, whatever it turn out to be, is a real and definite something in a person, implanted in him, like a talent or power, and not merely an act of the Divine Mind externally to him, as the forgiveness of sins may be.

<sup>1</sup> χάρισμα, δῶρον, δωρεὰ, and δώρημα.

<sup>2</sup> δωρεᾶς.

But the preceding verses contain a still more convincing statement, on which indeed one might not be unwilling to rest the whole question. St. Paul says, "Not as the offence, so also is the *gift*<sup>1</sup> . . . . the *gift* is of many offences unto justification." Here he distinctly declares that justification is the result of a *gift*. Now the word used for "gift" in the original, is the very word used elsewhere for extraordinary gifts, such as of healing, of tongues, and of miracles; that is, a definite power or virtue committed to us. No where else does the word occur in Scripture without this meaning; indeed, it necessarily has it from its grammatical form. St. Paul says, he "longs to see" the Romans, "that he may impart unto them *some spiritual gift*;" again, that "the *gift* of God is eternal life." He enumerates as gifts, prophecy, ministry, teaching, exhortation, giving, ruling, and showing mercy. Speaking of continence, he says, "Every man has his proper *gift* from God." He says, there are "diversities of *gifts*, but the same Spirit." He exhorts Timothy "not to neglect the *gift* that was in *him*," but to stir up, to re-ignite "the gift of God which was in him." St. Peter too speaks of our "ministering" our gifts "as good stewards<sup>2</sup>."

If, then, by a gift is meant a certain faculty or

<sup>1</sup> χάρισμα.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. i. 11; vi. 23; xii. 6—18. 1 Cor. vii. 7; xii. 4. 1 Tim. iv. 14. 2 Tim. i. 6. 1 Pet. iv. 10.

talent, moral, intellectual, or other, justification is some such power. It is not a mere change of purpose or disposition in God towards us, or change of state in us, or a liberty, privilege, or (as it may be called) citizenship, but a something lodged within us.

To the same effect is St. Paul's intimation, that righteousness is *ministered* or *dispensed* by the Spirit; for surely the idea of dispensing, as well as that conveyed in the general office of the gracious Dispenser, leads us to conclude that the righteousness dispensed is a thing, and not a name.

To these passages we shall be right in adding a number of others which speak of the Gospel Gift, though not calling it justification. For they speak as if there was *one* great benefit given to us under the Gospel; and so great and essential is justification, that it must be either this or included in it.

For instance; our Lord says to the Samaritan woman, "If thou knewest the *gift* of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give Me to drink, thou wouldst have asked of Him, and He would have given thee living water." The water was a real thing to be given and received.

Again: St. Peter says to the multitude "Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the *gift* of the Holy Ghost<sup>1</sup>;" can we doubt

<sup>1</sup> Johu iv. 10. Acts ii. 38.

that this is identical with the abundance of grace and of the *gift* of righteousness of which St. Paul speaks?

Again: the same Apostle alludes elsewhere to “those who were once enlightened and have tasted of the heavenly *gift* <sup>1</sup>.” Will it be said this means sanctification? then is sanctification represented as greater than justification; else why is not justification mentioned in a passage which is expressly speaking of a case in which a second justification is pronounced to be impossible? The contrast surely requires that justification should be mentioned; yet unless included in “the heavenly gift,” it is not. We may add such passages as the following: “The water that I shall give him, shall be *in him* a well of water springing up into everlasting life.” “He that believeth on Me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.” With such compare the words in the Prophet: “Then will I sprinkle clear water upon you, and ye shall be clean; from all your filthiness and from all your idols will I cleanse you.” This means justifying purification, for renewal is not mentioned till the next verse:—“A new heart *also* will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you.” By water, I say, is typified justification, which accordingly is a something applied and communicated, not a change in the Divine Mind merely.

<sup>1</sup> Heb. vi. 4.

<sup>2</sup> John iv. 14; vii. 38. Ezek. xxxvi. 25.

The same doctrine is implied in the Sacrament of Baptism, which certainly typifies the justifying gift. If so, that gift is not an act merely on God's part, but a something, proximate and individual, undergone, received, embraced by us.

Once more: whatever be the more precise meaning of the words, does not "the Bread of Life" which is to be "eaten," typify an *inward* gift, not merely an imputation? Yet who can deny that that gift carries with it the application of Christ's merits to the soul, that is, justification?

Moreover, these passages show that this gift, whatever it is, is not any moral excellence or grace, or merely a renewed state. For instance, to recur to the last instance, faith is but the *recipient* of the heavenly Bread, and therefore cannot be identical with it.

Thus an examination of the promises made us in Scripture, bears out the conclusion we had already drawn on other grounds, that the righteousness, on which we are called righteous, or are justified, that in which justification results or consists, which conveys or applies the great gospel privileges, that this justifying principle, though *within* us, as it must be, if it is to separate us from the world, yet is not *of* us or *in* us, not any quality or act of our minds, not faith, not renovation, not obedience, not any thing cognizable by man, but a certain *divine* gift in which all these qualifications are included.

4. Now to proceed a step further. We have



seen that, whereas justification is the *application of Christ's merits* to the individual, it is also an *inward gift*; in other words it is a real and actual communication to the soul of the Atonement through the ministrations of the Spirit. With whatever degree of confidence we might thus infer from the foregoing considerations, at least they avail in confirmation of such a doctrine, supposing it be otherwise and directly stated in Scripture, that there is such a wonderful communication vouchsafed to us. Now in truth a privilege is most explicitly promised us in Scripture, which accurately answers to this description, as being at once the special fruit of Christ's Sacrifice, and also an inward gift possessed and residing within us; I mean the *habitation* in us of God the Father and the Word Incarnate through the Holy Ghost. If this be so, we have found what we sought: *This* is to be justified, to receive the Divine Presence within us, and be made a Temple of the Holy Ghost.

God is every where as absolutely and entirely as if He were no where else; and it seems to be essential to the existence of every creature, rational and irrational, good and evil, in heaven and hell, that in some sense or other He should be present with them and be their life. Thus we are told concerning mankind, that "in Him we live, and move, and have our being." And He who lives in all creatures on earth in order to their mortal life, lives in Christians in a more divine way in order to their life immortal;

and as we do not know how the creation exists and lives in Him as a Creator, and use words about it beyond our comprehension, so much more (were not comparison out of the question) are we ignorant of this mode or nature of that life of God in the soul, which is the wellspring of the Christian's sanctity, and the seed of everlasting happiness. If this notion of the literal indwelling of God within us, whether in the way of nature or of grace, be decried as a sort of mysticism, I ask, in reply, whether it can possibly be but that His presence is in us, if He is every where; and whether the same tone of reasoning which denies that it is, does not also tend to deny the doctrine of His literal Omnipresence? So much in behalf of the general doctrine of God's presence in all His works. And if He is every where and dwells in all, there is no antecedent objection against taking Scripture literally, no difficulty in supposing that the truth is as Scripture says,—that as He dwells in us in one mode in the way of nature, so He is in us in another in the way of grace; that His infinite and incomprehensible essence, which once existed by and in itself alone, and then at the creation so far communicated itself to His works as to sustain what He had brought into existence, and that according to the different degrees of life necessary for their respective perfection, may in the Christian Church manifest itself in act and virtue in the hearts of Christians, as far surpassing what it is in unregenerate man, as its

presence in man excels its presence in a brute or a vegetable. And those who without any antecedent difficulty, still refuse to accept the literal interpretation of Scripture, should be reminded that since the promise expressly runs that we shall be made one *as* the Father and the Son are One, we are necessarily led either to think highly of the union of the Christian with God, or to disparage that of the Father and the Son; and that such school of religion as maintains that the former is but figurative, will certainly be led at length to deny the real union of our Lord with His Father, and from avoiding mysticism, will verge and fall upon what is called Unitarianism.

With these thoughts let us turn to the review of the texts in which this awful promise is made to us.

Our Saviour, then, thus speaks of our communion with the Father and Son;—"At that day ye shall know that I am in My Father, and ye in Me and I in you." "He that loveth Me, shall be loved of My Father; and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him. . . . My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him." Again He prays to His Father that His disciples "all may be one, as Thou, Father, art in Me and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us. . . . I in them and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> John xiv. 20, 21, 23; xvii. 21—23.

Accordingly St. John says in his General Epistle, that "if we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and His love is perfected in us. . . . He that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him. . . . He that keepeth His commandments, dwelleth in Him and He in him." "We are in Him that is true, even in His Son Jesus Christ." "Truly our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ<sup>1</sup>."

Further, this fellowship with the Son, and with the Father in the Son, is made through the Spirit. "Hereby we know that we dwell in Him and He in us, because He hath given us of His Spirit." Hence St. Paul speaks of the "fellowship of the Holy Ghost;" and that "we are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in us;" and that "our body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in us, which we have of God, and we are not our own<sup>2</sup>." Agreeably to which are our Saviour's words, who, when He promised the indwelling of Father and Son in His followers, said also, "I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter that He may abide with you for ever, even the Spirit of Truth. . . . He dwelleth in you, and shall be in you." And then He adds: "I will not leave you comfortless, I will come to you."

Moreover this indwelling had been promised as

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iv. 12, 16; iii. 20; i. 3.

<sup>2</sup> John iii. 24; iv. 13. 2 Cor. xiii. 14. 1 Cor. iii. 16; vi. 19. John xiv. 16—18.

the *distinguishing* grace of the Gospel. St. Paul declares both the prophecy and its fulfilment in the text: "Ye are the temple of the Living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them and walk in them; and I will be their God and they shall be My people." Again in our Saviour's words, "He that believeth on Me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water; but this spake He of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive; for the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified<sup>1</sup>." Accordingly in some of the texts just quoted, He who dwells in Christians is called "He that is *True*," and the Comforter is "the Spirit of *Truth*;" grace and *truth* being the characteristics of the New Covenant.

And further let it be remarked that the Divine Presence vouchsafed to us, besides being that of the Holy Trinity, is specially said to be the presence of Christ; which would seem to imply that the "Word made flesh," is in some mysterious manner bestowed upon us. Thus He says; "If any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come into him, and will sup with him, and he with Me<sup>2</sup>." This allusion to a feast, is conveyed in still more sacred and wonderful language in the following passage, to which I have already alluded: "I am the Living

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. vi. 16; John vii. 38, 39.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. iii. 20.

Bread which came down from heaven; if any man eat of this Bread, he shall live for ever, and the Bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the world." . . . . "He that eateth My flesh and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me and I in him." Again: "We are members of His body<sup>1</sup>." Such, as far as the words of Scripture go, is the great gift of the Gospel which Christ has purchased for all believers;—not many words are necessary to connect it with justification. I observe then,

1. First, this indwelling accurately answers, as I have already said, to what the righteousness which justifies has already been shown to consist in; an inward gift conveying the virtue of Christ's Atoning Blood. The coincidence of one and the other in such a definition, proves their identity; if to justify be to impart a certain inward token of our personal redemption, and if the presence of God within us is such a token, our justification must consist in God's coming to us and dwelling in us. It were the same to maintain, though knowing that God lives in us in the way of nature, that our mortal life does not consist in that indwelling, as to allow that He dwells in us Christians in a supernatural and singular way, yet deny that our new life of privilege and blessing does not depend on that Mystical Presence, to allow that we can be temples of God yet not justified. On the other hand, since this great gift is the possession

<sup>1</sup> John vi. 51. 56. Eph. v. 30.

of all Christians from the time they become Christians, whatever measures of increase it admits, justification as certainly presupposes it, as it involves justification. In a word, what is it to have His presence within us, but to be His consecrated Temple? what to be His Temple, but to be set apart from a state of nature, from sin and Satan, guilt and peril? what to be thus set apart, but to be declared and treated as righteous? and what is this but to be justified?

2. Next, it may be remarked that whatever blessings in detail we ascribe to justification, are ascribed in Scripture to this sacred indwelling. For instance, is justification *remission of sins*? the Gift of the Spirit conveys it, as is evident from the Scripture doctrine about Baptism; "One Baptism for the remission of sins." Is justification *adoption* into the family of God? in like manner the Spirit is expressly called the Spirit of adoption, "the Spirit whereby we cry, Abba, Father." Is justification *reconciliation* with God? St. Paul says "Jesus Christ is in you, unless ye be reprobates." Is justification *life*? the same Apostle says; "Christ liveth in me." Is justification given to *faith*? he also prays "that Christ may dwell in" Christians' "hearts by faith." Does justification lead to holy *obedience*? Our Lord assures us that "he that abideth in Him and He in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit." Is it through justification that we rejoice *in hope of the glory* of God? in like manner "Christ in us" is

said to be "the hope of glory." Christ then is our Righteousness by dwelling in us by the Spirit; He justifies us by entering into us, He continues to justify us by remaining in us. *This* is really and truly our justification, not faith, not holiness, not (much less) a mere imputation; but through God's mercy, the very Presence of Christ.

3. It appears, moreover, that this inward presence is sometimes described as God's presence or communion; sometimes that of Father and Son; sometimes of the Holy Ghost; sometimes of Christ the Incarnate Mediator; sometimes "of God through the Spirit;" sometimes of Christ, of His Body and Blood, of His Body in "flesh and bones," and this through the Spirit. Different degrees or characteristics of the gift are perchance denoted by these various terms, though to discriminate them is far beyond our powers. What is *common* to all Christians, as distinguished from good men under other Dispensations, is that, however the latter were justified in God's inscrutable resources, Christians are justified by the communication of an inward, most sacred, and most mysterious gift. From the very time of Baptism they are temples of the Holy Ghost. This is what is common to all; yet it is certain too, that over and above what all have, a still further communication of God's glory is promised to the obedient, and that so considerable as sometimes to be spoken of as the special communication, as if there were none previously. "He that loveth Me,"



says our Lord, "shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him;" and "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God."

4. Further, we here see in what sense it is true that justification admits of increase, and in what not. The fact that we are the Temple of God does not admit of more or less; the words have no meaning when applied to it. Righteousness then, considered as the state of being God's temple cannot be increased; but, considered as the divine glory which that state implies, it can be increased, as the pillar of the cloud which guided the Israelites could become more or less bright. Justification being acceptableness with God, all beings who are justified differ from all who are not, in their very condition, in a certain property, which the one have and the other have not. In this sense it is as absurd to speak of our being more justified, as of life, or colour, or any other abstract idea increasing. But when we compare the various orders of just and acceptable beings with one another, we see that though they all are in God's favour, some may be more "pleasant," "acceptable," "righteous," than others, that is, may have more of the light of God's countenance shed on them; as a glorified Saint is more acceptable than one still in the flesh. In this sense then justification does admit of increase and of degrees; and whether we say justification depends on faith or on obedience, in the same degree that faith

or obedience grows, so does justification. And again, if (which is a point not yet touched on,) justification is conveyed peculiarly through the Sacraments; as Holy Communion conveys a more awful presence of God than Holy Baptism, so must it be the instrument of a higher justification. On the other hand, those who are declining in their obedience, as they are quenching the light within them, so are they diminishing their justification.

5. And this view of the subject enables us to understand how infants may be regenerate, though they give no indications of being so. For as God dwelt secretly in His material Temple, ever hallowing it, yet only in season giving sensible evidences of what was there, so may He be present with their souls, rescuing them from Satan, and imparting new powers, manifesting new objects, and suggesting new thoughts and desires, without their being conscious or other witnesses of His work.

6. Moreover, if justification be the inward application of the Atonement, we are furnished at once with a sufficient definition of a Sacrament for the use of our Church. The Romanist considers that there are seven; we do not strictly determine the number. We define the word generally to be an "outward sign of an inward grace," without saying to how many ordinances this applies. However, what we do determine is, that Christ has ordained two special Sacraments, as *generally necessary to salvation*. This, then, is the characteristic mark of

those two, separating them from all other whatever; and what is this but saying in other words that they are the only *justifying* rites, or instruments of communicating the Atonement, which *is* the one thing necessary to us? Ordination, for instance, gives *power*, yet without making the soul *acceptable* to God; Confirmation gives light and strength, yet is the mere completion of Baptism; and Absolution is a negative ordinance removing the barrier which sin has raised between us and that grace, which by inheritance is ours. But the two Sacraments "of the Gospel," are the instruments of inward life, according to our Lord's declaration, that Baptism is a new *birth*, and that in the Eucharist we eat the *living* Bread.

7. Lastly. We now may see what the connexion really is between justification and renewal. I have said above, that God's declaring us righteous renews us, as in the beginning He spake the Word, and the world was created; but *how* renewal followed on justification did not appear. Of course, all that is said on this subject must be mystery after all; yet so much we may now say, that if the justifying Word be attended by the spiritual entrance of Christ into the soul, justification is perfectly distinct from renewal, with which Romanists identify it, yet directly productive of it, which strict Protestants deny. The latter say that renewal is a collateral result with justification from faith; the former say that it precedes justification. Rather

Christ's sacred Presence, which shines forth in the heart straight upon the word of justification, creates a renewal there as certainly as a light involves illumination, or fire heat. And on the other hand, since quenching this renovating Presence necessarily leads to its departure, renewal may be considered the condition on our part as well as the result of justification. The first gift runs into the second as its necessary limit; and the second being rejected, carries away with it the first. And the one cannot be separated from the other except in idea, unless the sun's rays can be separated from the sun, or the power of purifying from water. I shall resume the subject in the next Lecture.

## NOTE ON LECTURE VI.

It is proposed at the end of the Volume to refer to various authorities in behalf of the foregoing view of justification; but it may be well to extract at once a passage from the Homilies, as a sanction and illustration of it. The point is this: that neither the imputed righteousness of Christ, nor imparted or inherent righteousness, is the constituting or formal cause of justification, or that in which a justified state consists; but a gift which includes both of these, and is greater than either, viz. the actual Presence, in a mysterious way, or Indwelling in the soul through the Spirit, of the Word Incarnate, in whom is the Father. The writer of the Homily in question incidentally alludes to the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper; but with this further view of the doctrine we are not here concerned. He is enlarging on St. Paul's words, that "Christ died for our sins and rose *again for our justification*," and he says,—“It had not been enough to be delivered by His death, from sin, except by His resurrection we have been endowed with righteousness. And it should not avail us to be delivered from death, except He had risen again to open for us the gates of heaven, to enter into life everlasting. . . . Thus hath His resurrection wrought for us life and righteousness. He passed through death and hell, to the intent to put us in good hope that by His strength we shall do the same. He paid the ransom of sin, that it should not be laid to our charge. He destroyed the devil and all his tyranny, and openly triumphed over him, and took away from him all his captives, and hath raised and set them with himself among the heavenly citizens above. He died to destroy the rule of the devil in us, and He rose again *to send down His Holy Spirit to rule in our hearts, to endow us with perfect righteousness.*”

Thus a *justifying righteousness*, viz. that which St. Paul

speaks as gained by Christ's resurrection, is ascribed to the work of the Holy Spirit in our hearts. The Homily continues :—

“ Thus it is true that David sung, [‘ Truth hath sprung out of the earth, and righteousness hath looked down from heaven.’] The truth of God's promise is in earth to man declared; or, from the earth is the Everlasting Verity, God's Son, risen to life; and the *true Righteousness of the Holy Ghost*, looking out of heaven, and in most liberal largess dealt upon all the world. Thus is glory and praise rebounded upwards to God above for His mercy and truth. And thus is peace come down from heaven to men of good and faithful hearts. ‘ Thus is mercy and truth’ as David writeth, ‘ together met; thus is peace and righteousness embracing and kissing each other.’ If thou doubtst of so great wealth and felicity that is wrought for thee, O man, call to thy mind that therefore hast thou received into thine own possession the Everlasting Verity, our Saviour Jesus Christ, to confirm to thy conscience the truth of all this matter. Thou hast received Him, if in true faith and repentance of heart thou hast received Him; if in purpose of amendment thou hast received Him for an everlasting gage, or pledge of thy salvation. Thou hast received His body which was once broken, and His blood *which was shed for the remission of thy sin*. Thou hast received His Body, *to have within thee the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, for to dwell with thee*, to endow thee with grace, to strengthen thee against thine enemies, and to comfort thee with their presence. *Thou hast received His Body to endow thee with everlasting righteousness*, to assure thee of everlasting bliss, and life of thy soul.” Thus justification consists in “ righteousness,” and righteousness in the inward presence of God, in “ receiving” within us Christ's “ body” and “ blood which was shed for the remission of sins;” which moreover communicates, “ to dwell in us,” the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost.

To proceed :—

“ Doubt not of the truth of this matter, how great and high

soever these things be. It becometh God to do no small deeds, how impossible soever they seem to thee. Pray to God that thou mayest have faith to perceive this great *mystery* of Christ's resurrection; that by faith thou mayest certainly believe nothing to be impossible with God. Only bring thou faith to Christ's Holy Word and Sacrament . . . Thus, good Christian people, forasmuch as ye have heard then so great and excellent benefits of Christ's mighty and glorious resurrection, as how that He hath ransomed sin, overcome the devil, death, and hell, and hath victoriously gotten the better hand of them all, to make us free and safe from them, and knowing that we be by this benefit of His resurrection risen with Him by our faith unto life everlasting, being in full surety of our hope, we shall have our bodies likewise raised again from death, to have them glorified in immortality, and joined to His glorious body, having in the meanwhile His Holy Spirit within our hearts, as a seal and pledge of our everlasting inheritance, by whose assistance we be *replenished with all righteousness*, by whose power we shall be able to subdue all our evil affections rising against the pleasure of God; these things, I say, well considered, let us now in the rest of our life declare our faith that we have in this most fruitful article, by framing ourselves thereunto, in rising daily from sin to *righteousness and holiness of life.*"

This last extended sentence, be it observed, is describing the "benefits of Christ's resurrection," that is, according to St. Paul's words on which the Homily is commenting, "our *justification*," or our "endowment with perfect righteousness," as the Homily itself calls it, ascribing it to the operation of the Holy Ghost. This then is *the* great gift of the Gospel, manifold, but one, of which justification and sanctification are the two principal effects, divisible however only in our idea of them, not in fact; and that this one gift, considered in itself, is the sacred presence of the Word Incarnate within us, as both righteousness and renewal, a cleansing from guilt and from sin, is stated still more forcibly than hitherto in the words which follow:—

“ What a shame were it for us, being *thus* so clearly and freely *washed from our sin*, to return to the filthiness thereof again! What a folly were it, *thus endowed with righteousness*, to lose it again! What madness were it to lose the inheritance that we be now set in, for the vile and transitory pleasure of sin! And what unkindness should it be, where our Saviour Christ of His mercy is come to us, to *dwell within us* as our guest, to drive Him from us, and to banish Him violently out of our souls, and, instead of Him, *in whom is all grace and virtue*, to receive the ungracious spirit of the devil, the founder of all naughtiness and mischief! How can we find in our hearts to show such extreme unkindness to Christ, which hath now so gently called us to mercy, and offered Himself unto us, and *He now entered within us*? Yea, how dare we be so bold to renounce *the presence of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost*, (for where one is, there is God all whole in majesty, together with all His power, wisdom, and goodness,) and fear not, I say, the danger and peril of so traitorous a defiance and departure?”

Now surely there is something very striking and arresting in this *repeated* mention of the Divine Indwelling, over and above its being mentioned at all. Nor is this the last reference to it; after a while the Homily continues:—

“ Apply yourselves, good friends, to live in Christ, *that Christ may still live in you*, whose *favour and assistance if ye have*,”—

Favour and assistance, be it observed, denote, in other words, a state of justification and of renewal:—

“ Whose favour and assistance if ye have, then have ye everlasting life already *within you*, then can nothing hurt you. Whatsoever is hitherto done and committed, Christ, ye see, *hath offered you pardon*, and clearly received you *into His favour again*; in full surety whereof ye have Him now *inhabiting and dwelling within you*.”—Sermon, of the Resurrection.



## LECTURE VII.

---

### THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE GIFT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

---

Is. lxi. 10.

“He hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness; as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, or as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.”

It is not uncommon in Scripture, as all readers must observe, to represent the especial gift of the Gospel as a robe or garment, bestowed on those who are brought into the Church of Christ. Thus in the text the prophet speaks of being “clothed with the garments of salvation, covered with the robe of righteousness,” as with a rich bridal dress. A passage was quoted in a former place from the prophet Zechariah to the same purport; in which Almighty God takes from Joshua the high priest his filthy garments, and gives him change of raiment, and a mitre for his head. In like manner, when the prodigal son came home, his father put

on him "the best robe," "and a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet;" agreeable to which is St. Paul's declaration that "as many as have been baptized into Christ, have *put on* Christ."

Now such expressions as these in Scripture are too forcible and varied to be a mere figure denoting the *profession of Christianity*; as if our putting on Christ were a taking on us the name and responsibilities of a Christian; as I shall take for granted. It is much the same kind of evasion or explaining away, to say that by God's clothing us in righteousness is only meant His *counting* us as if righteous; all the difference being that in the former interpretation the clothing is made to stand for our calling ourselves, and in the latter for God's calling us, what really we are not.

Nor, again, can these expressions be very well taken to mean newness of life, holiness, and obedience; for this reason, if for no other, that no one is all at once holy, and renewed, in that full sense which must be implied if the terms be interpreted of holiness. Baptized persons do not so put on Christ as to be forthwith altogether different men from what they were before; at least this is not the rule, as far as we have means of deciding. Thus there is a call on the face of the matter for some more adequate interpretation of the text and like passages, than is supplied either by the Roman or the Protestant creed; and this surely is found in the doctrine of the last Lecture. If that be true,

the robe vouchsafed to us is the inward presence of Christ, ministered to us by the Holy Ghost; which, it is plain, admits of being immediately vouchsafed in its fulness, as a sort of invisible Shekinah, or seal of God's election, yet without involving the necessity of a greater moral change than is promised and effected in Baptism.

With this, too, agrees what is told us of our own duties towards this sacred endowment, which are represented as negative rather than active; I mean, we are enjoined *not* to injure or profane it, but so to honour it in our outward conduct, that it may be continued and increased in us. For instance, our Lord says, "Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not *defiled* their garments; and they shall walk with Me in white, for they are worthy<sup>1</sup>." Such words are more naturally interpreted of an inward gift than of a mere imputation; and scarcely admit of being explained of a moral condition of heart, attained (under grace) *through* our own exertions. They are parallel to St. Paul's warning against "grieving the Spirit of God;" which may just as reasonably be interpreted of mere moral excellence, as in some heretical schools has been done. Of the same character are exhortations such as St. Paul's, not "to defile the temple of God;" to recollect that we are the temple of God, and that the Holy Ghost is in us.

<sup>1</sup> Rev. iii. 4.

Moreover, it may throw light on the meaning of the text to observe, that, whereas we have gained under the Gospel what we lost in Adam, and justification is a reversing of our forfeiture, and a robe of righteousness is what Christ gives, perchance a robe is what Adam lost. If so, what is told us of what he lost, will explain what it is we gain. Now the peculiar gift which Adam lost, is told us in the Book of Genesis; and it certainly seems to have been a supernatural clothing. He was stripped of it by sinning as of a covering, and shrank from the sight of himself. This was the sign of his inward loathsomeness; and accordingly all through Scripture we find stress is laid on one especial punishment, which is hereafter to result from sin, of a most piercing and agonizing character, the manifestation of our shame. When we consider what our feelings are now as connected with this subject, we may fancy what an inexpressibly keen anguish is thus in store for sinners, when their eyes shall be opened, who at present "glory in their shame, and mind earthly things." Such then was Adam's loss in God's sight, as visibly typified; and such as what he lost is the nature of the Gospel gift, so far as it is a return to what he lost. And as such our Lord speaks of it in the Apocalypse, warning us, as of our natural destitution, so of His power and willingness to remedy it. "I counsel thee," He says, "to buy of Me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayst be rich; and white raiment,

that thou mayst be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear<sup>1</sup>." And again, "Blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame<sup>2</sup>." Christ thus clothes us in God's sight with something over and above nature, which Adam forfeited.

Now that Adam's supernatural clothing was not a mere imputed righteousness, need not formally be proved; it was a something, of the loss of which he was himself at once conscious, which he could not be of acts passing in the Divine mind. Nor was it actual inherent holiness; at least we may so conjecture from this circumstance, that such a gift is the result of practice and habituation, and as it would be attainable but gradually, so when attained it would scarcely yield at once to external temptation. But whether or not we may trust ourselves to such arguments, the early Church supersedes the need of them by explaining that what Adam lost on sinning, was a supernatural endowment, and agreeably with the view of justification already taken, nothing less than the inward presence either of the Divine Word, or of the Holy Ghost<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Rev. iii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. xvi. 15.

<sup>3</sup> "The image of God is a comprehensive thing, and there are many lines requisite to complete the divine similitude, after which the first man was created. To this belongs man's intellectual power, his liberty of will, his dominion over the other creatures, flowing from the two former. These make up the

The Catholic fathers, as Bishop Bull has collected their testimony, teach that the principle of sanctity

*τὸ οὐσιῶδες*, that part of that divine image which is natural and essential to man, and consequently can never be wholly blotted out, defaced, or extinguished, but still remains even in man fallen. But beside these the Church of God hath even acknowledged in the first man certain additional ornaments, and as it were complements of the divine image, such as immortality, grace, holiness, righteousness, whereby man approached more nearly to the similitude and likeness of God. These were (if I may so speak) the lively colours wherein the grace, the beauty, and lustre of the divine image principally consisted; these colours faded,—yea, were defaced and blotted out by man's transgression. St. Gregory Nyssen (*lib. de Hom. Opific. 4.* [vol. i. p. 53.]) sets forth this by a most apt and elegant similitude, comparing the animated and living effigies of that great King with the image of the Emperors, which is so expressed by the hand of the artificer, either in sculpture or picture, as to represent the very dress and ensigns of the royal majesty, such as the purple robe, the sceptre, and the diadem. For as the emperor's image doth represent, not only his countenance and the figure of his body, and, as it were, his substance, but also his dress and ornaments, and royal ensigns; so man doth then perfectly represent in himself the image and similitude of God, when to the good things of nature, which cannot be blotted out or extinguished, the ornaments of grace and virtue also are added: when man's nature is (as he saith) "not clothed with purple, or vaunting its dignity by a sceptre or a diadem; (for the archetype consists not in such things as these;) but instead of purple is clothed in virtue, which is of all other the most royal vestment; and, for a sceptre, is supported by a blessed immortality; and, instead of a diadem, is adorned with a crown of righteousness." Now that these supernatural ornaments and perfections were a part, and a chief part of the image of

in Adam, to which was attached the gift of immortality, was something distinct from and above his human nature. That nature, indeed, did look towards such a perfection, but could not in itself reach it. Without this heavenly possession man was not able to keep the Law according to the Covenant of Life, but with it he could serve God acceptably, and gain the reward set before him.

This interpretation of the Scripture account of man's original nature and fall is confirmed by various passages of St. Paul. For instance ; he speaks of man as being by creation what he calls a *soul* ; "The first Adam was made a living *soul* ;" just before, he uses a derived form of the same word, though in our version it does not appear. He says, "there is a *natural* body," that is, "a body with a *soul*." Elsewhere he says, "the *natural* man," that is, the man with a *soul*, "receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God<sup>1</sup>." Human nature then, viewed in itself, is not spiritual, and that neither in soul nor body. Accordingly St. Paul contrasts with

God, after which the first man is said to be created, is not an idle dream or fancy of the Christian writers, but was a notion received and acknowledged in the Jewish Church many years before our Saviour's appearance in the flesh. This is very manifest from the almost divine author of the Book of Wisdom, which was always entertained in the Christian Church with a reverence next to that which they paid to the divinely inspired writings. For he tells us so."—Bull, *State of Man before the Fall*, p. 115.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 44, 45 ; ii. 14, 15. 1 Thess. v. 23.

this mere natural state that which is spiritual, which alone is pleasing to God, and which alone can see Him. "The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness unto him, neither can he know them, because they are *spiritually* discerned; but he that is *spiritual* discerneth all things." In like manner, after saying there is a natural, he adds, "there is a *spiritual* body;" and after saying that Adam in himself was but a living soul, he adds, that Christ, the beginning of the new creation, is "a quickening *Spirit*." In accordance with this distinction in another Epistle he prays for his disciples, "that their whole *spirit*, and *soul*, and body may be preserved blameless."

Whatever else then Adam had by creation, this seems to have been one main gift, or rather that in which all others were included, the presence of God the Holy Ghost in him, exalting him into the family and service of His Almighty Creator. This was his clothing; this he lost by disobedience; this Christ has regained for us. This then is the robe of righteousness spoken of in the text, to be bestowed in its fulness hereafter, bestowed partially at once; less at present than what Adam had in point of completeness, far greater in its nature; less in that he had neither decaying body nor infected soul, far more precious in that it is the indwelling and manifestation in the heart of the Incarnate Word. For what in truth is the gift even in this our state of humiliation, but a grafting invisibly



into the Body of Christ; a mysterious union with Him, and a fellowship in all the grace and blessedness which is hidden in Him? Thus it separates us from other children of Adam, is our badge and distinction in the presence of the unseen world, and is the earnest of greater good in store. It is an angelic glory which good spirits honour, which devils tremble at, and which we are bound reverently to cherish, with a careful abstinence from sin, and with the sacrifice of good works. Well then may Prophets and Apostles exult in it as the great gift of Divine Mercy, as the rich garment of salvation, and the enjewelled robe of righteousness; as linen clean and white, or as it is elsewhere expressed, as "Christ in us," and "upon us," and around us; as if it were a light streaming from our hearts, pervading the whole man, enwrapping and hiding the lineaments and members of our fallen nature, circling round us, and returning inward to the centre from which it issues. The Almighty Father, looking on us, sees not us, but this Sacred Presence, even His dearly beloved Son spiritually manifested in us; with His blood upon our door-posts, in earnest of that final abolition of sin which is at length to be accomplished in us.

Such is the great gift of the Gospel conveyed to us by the ministration of the Spirit, partly now, fully hereafter, and to it a number of passages in the New Testament seem to refer. I shall now proceed to consider it under two chief designations

which are there given to it; by attending to which we shall conceive more worthily of our privilege, and gain a deeper insight into the sacred text; I mean *glory* and *power*. Both these titles are applied to the gift in the following passages:

“It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in *glory*; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in *power*; it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body.”

St. Paul prays to God for his brethren, “that He would grant you, according to the riches of His *glory*, to be strengthened with *power* by His Spirit in the inner man, that *Christ may dwell in your hearts* by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all Saints what is the breadth and length, and depth and height.”

“Made *powerful* with all *power*, according to the might of His *glory*, unto all patience and long-suffering with joy, giving thanks unto the Father, who hath made us equal to sharing the inheritance of the saints in *light*.”

“It is impossible for those who were once *enlightened*, and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the good word of God, and the *powers* of the world to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance<sup>1</sup>.”

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 43, 44; Eph. iii. 16; Col. i. 11, 12; Heb. vi. 4—6.

Let us then consider this great gift, first as it is *glory*, then as it is *power*.

1. Besides the usual sense which the word *glory* bears in Scripture in relation to our duties to Almighty God, as when we are told to "do all to the glory of God;" it has besides, I need hardly say, in a number of places a mysterious sense, denoting some attribute, property, virtue, or presence of the Divine Nature manifested visibly. Thus we read of the glory of the Lord appearing over the Tabernacle, and entering into the Temple; and in like manner of the glory of the Lord shining round about the shepherds. Cases of this kind must occur to every attentive reader of the Scriptures. In these places it seems to mean a presence of God; but sometimes it stands for His moral attributes. Moses gained leave to see the skirts of His glory, and the permission was conveyed in these words, "I will make all My *goodness* pass before thee." Accordingly Almighty God was proclaimed, as He passed by, as "the Lord, the Lord God, merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth."

Now as long as Scripture uses the word *glory* to denote the general awfulness attendant on the presence of Almighty God, there is nothing to surprise us, for every thing that attaches to Him, is mysterious: but it becomes remarkable, when we find, as in other passages, the same mysterious attribute, which belongs to Him, ascribed to us.

In pursuing this point, it is obvious first to mention our Saviour's words to His Almighty Father in His prayer before His passion:—"The glory which Thou gavest Me, *I have given them*<sup>1</sup>."

What is this glory which has passed from Christ to us? It is some high gift which admits of being transferred, as is evident. What it was in Christ, we see in some degree by the following words of St. Paul:—"Like as Christ was raised up from the dead by *the glory of the Father*, even so we also should walk in newness of life." Whatever else it was, it appears hence that it was a presence or power which operated for the resurrection of His body. In this connexion it may be well to direct attention to a passage which, otherwise with our present notions, we should explain (what we should call) more naturally. Before Christ raises Lazarus, He says to Martha, "Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the *glory of God*?" What He *had* said before to her was simply, that He was the Resurrection and the Life.

And when granted to us, it is characterized by the same operative power; St. Paul speaks in a text already cited of "the *might of God's glory in us*;" of our being "*strengthened with might* by His Spirit in the inner man, according to the riches of His glory." And elsewhere of "the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the Saints;" and St. Peter

<sup>1</sup> John xvii. 22; xi. 40. Rom. vi. 4. Col. i. 11. Eph. iii. 16.

of our being called “to glory and virtue;” of the “Spirit of glory and of God *resting* on us;” and of our being “*changed* from glory to glory.” The gift then is habitual; both permanent and increasing. Again: “Ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord; walk as children of light.” “Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.” “The God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.” To these may be added a text, which we now understand differently, “All have sinned, and come short of,” or *need* “the *glory* of God<sup>1</sup>.”

Lastly, these mentions of glory are distinctly connected with the gift of “righteousness.” St. Paul speaks indifferently of the “ministration of the Spirit,” and “of the ministration of *righteousness* exceeding in *glory*<sup>2</sup>.”

Now without knowing at all what “glory” means, all these passages seem to show that it is a gift intimately existing in God’s nature, and intimately

<sup>1</sup> Eph. v. 8. 14. 2 Cor. iv. 4. Rom. iii. 23. ἵστεροῦνται τῆς δόξης. Egent gloriâ Dei. Cyprian makes his sense of the word clearer by reading *claritas* for *gloria*, ad Quir. ii. 27. τῆς δόξης ἀποστερηῆ· τῶν γὰρ προσκεκροκότων εἶ· ὁ δὲ προσκεκροκότως οὐ τῶν δοξαζομένων, ἀλλὰ τῶν κατησχυμμένων, Chrys. *in loc.* “that is, the fruition of God in glory:” Whitby *in loc.*

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 8. 9.

united to the Christian. Here then is additional evidence that an endowment is bestowed upon us distinct from any moral gift, or any mere external title or imputation; and that this endowment thus distinguished is nothing else than our righteousness.

2. The same general conclusion will follow from considering it as *power*.

Properly speaking, the word “power” denotes a divine attribute or prerogative. As glory seems to designate the inherent perfection of Almighty God from eternity, (as, for instance, when the Son is called “the brightness of God’s glory,”) so “power” is a characteristic of that perfection as manifested in time. Creation is the offspring of His *power*; again, He “upholds all things by the word of His *power*.”

Next, it is used to denote the particular attribute manifested in the Economy of Redemption and in the Person of the Redeemer; for instance,—“The *power* of the Highest” overshadowed the Blessed Virgin in order to the Incarnation. “Jesus returned in the *power* of the Spirit into Galilee.” Christ was “declared to be the Son of God with *power*, according to the Spirit of Holiness, by the resurrection from the dead.” St. Paul speaks of “knowing Him and the *power* of His resurrection.” “Jesus immediately perceived that virtue” or *power*, (for the word is the same in the original,) “had gone out of Him.” “There went *power* out of Him and healed them all.” “Mighty works do show

forth themselves in Him," that is, "virtues or powers do energize, act, live, or work, in Him<sup>1</sup>."

Next let it be observed that this virtue or power was given to His disciples, and then in our Version the word is commonly translated *miracle*. It is true, it does sometimes mean precisely the miraculous act or work; but it often means, not the work, but, as the word *virtue* implies, the faculty or gift of power within the agent which effects it. For instance: "He gave them *power* and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases." "Ye shall receive the *power* of the Holy Ghost coming upon you." "My speech, and my preaching, was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of *power*." In like manner Simon Magus, when he bewitched the Samaritans, was called by them "the great *power*" or virtue "of God<sup>2</sup>."

Further, the effects of this indwelling gift in the Apostles, are described as similar to those which our Lord allowed to appear in Himself; I mean, it showed itself as a virtue going out of them, so as to obviate all conjecture of its being a mere act of the power of God, external to themselves, accompanying their word or deed, and not an effect through them and from them. Thus of St. Paul it is said, that "God wrought special miracles by the

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 35; iv. 14. Rom. i. 4. Phil. iii. 10. Mark v. 30. Luke vi. 19. Mark vi. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Luke ix. 1. Acts i. 8. 1 Cor. ii. 4. Acts viii. 10.

hands of Paul, so that *from his body* were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs and aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them." Again: "By the hands of the Apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people; insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at least the *shadow* of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them<sup>2</sup>." The instance of the virtue of Elisha's bones in raising the dead is another remarkable instance of the inward gift of the Spirit, and anticipates Gospel times.

St. Paul's ministerial power is spoken of as a similar inward gift;—"whereof," he says, that is, of the Gospel, "I was made a minister, by the gift of the grace of God, which was given to me by the *inward working of His power*." Again, he speaks of his "striving according to His working, *which worketh in me mightily*<sup>2</sup>."

Such, lastly, in kind, though not miraculous, (in the common sense of the word,) is the gift bestowed upon the Christian Church and its members. The same word being used, we may well believe that it is an inward yet not a moral gift, but a supernatural power or divine virtue. Thus, for instance, our Lord speaks of it as in the body or Church; and says,

<sup>1</sup> Acts xix. 11, 12; v. 12—15.

<sup>2</sup> Eph. iii. 7. Col. i. 29.



on one occasion, there were some about Him, "who should not taste of death, till they had seen the kingdom of God come *with power*." The Gospel is said to be "the *power* of God unto salvation;" Christ, "unto the called, both Jews and Greeks," is "the power of God and wisdom of God." Now here, even though we were not elsewhere told that a divine indwelling is vouchsafed us, nor were guided by the meaning of the word "power" in the foregoing texts, in what true or reverent sense could Christ be said to be power or virtue to us, unless He literally is so? If He has really vouchsafed to become the principle of our spiritual life, then He may suitably be designated as what He is; but else who shall presume in words to degrade Him to such a ministrative office? We know, the (so called) Unitarians would destroy a testimony of the Psalmist's to our Lord's Divinity, by reading, instead of "Thy throne, O God," "God is thy throne for ever and ever." And it is usual in reply to object, that, whether or not the grammatical construction bears them out, still it is most improbable antecedently that an inspired writer would be so familiar with the thought of God as to call Him (as they allege) the throne on which a creature reigns.

Calvinists thus argue, and rightly; but if they pursued the argument to its legitimate results, they would surely cease to be Calvinists. "We read," says a modern writer of their school, "that heaven is God's throne, and earth His footstool, but who

can conceive God Himself to be the throne, on which a creature should reign to eternity<sup>1</sup>?" Now God's condescension in His dealings with us has been so unutterably great, that no communication made in Scripture can surprise us concerning it; only let us be sure that His word never outstrips His deed; and that if strong words are used, they are no mere figure, but are used with a purpose. As then we shrink from going beyond the word of Scripture in what we attribute to God's condescension, so let us shrink from coming short of it, when it speaks, by a mere figurative interpretation; as we should fear to call God the throne of the creature, since it is not and therefore cannot be said, so when He does call Himself our inward life, let us fear by a false humility to reject it. Let us consider God's word and deed to run together, and then, while we cease to be Socinians, we shall cease also to be Calvinists. The same disposition which leads us to believe that divine attributes are really Christ's, because they are said to be His, will lead us to consider that divine gifts are really ours, because they are said to be ours, and that they cannot be imputed to us without being imparted. If Christ is said to be in us, or "a power of God to us," let us believe that He is what He says He is. He condescends to wash our feet; let us tremble with amazement, yet suffer it. To proceed:—

<sup>1</sup> Scott's Essays, No. 6.

In like manner we read, "Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the *power* of Christ may rest upon me." Now this expression "rest upon me," is in the original, "tabernacle over me;" and is used elsewhere. For instance; in an earlier part of this same Epistle, the word "tabernacle" has been used for the mortal body. What, then, St. Paul rejoices in, is that the power of Christ is upon his tabernacle or body; and the weight of this privilege is intimated by the use of the word in the Apocalypse, to describe the characteristic of future glory, "He that sitteth on the throne shall tabernacle over them <sup>1</sup>."

To the same purport are the following passages: "I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me," that is, more literally, "I am every way strong in the power-imparting Christ," or "in Christ who worketh power in me;" and it is observable, that the power given us is said to be the same power, as it is elsewhere called glory, which wrought the Resurrection. St. Paul, for instance, prays for the Ephesians, that "the eyes of their understanding may be enlightened, that they may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of His *power* to us-ward who believe, according to the inward working of the might of His strength, *which He* wrought in

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. xii. 9. Rev. vii. 15; xxi. 3.

Christ when He raised Him from the dead." He returns thanks and praises "unto Him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, *according to the power that worketh in us.*" He desires for himself that he "may know Him, and the *power* of His resurrection." He speaks of "the work of faith with *power.*" He bids Timothy "be partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the *power* of God<sup>1</sup>;" he declares that Christ is made a Priest "not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the *power* of an endless life," His eternal and spiritual existence becoming an inward power to His followers, such as could not be imparted by any earthly system. Again, St. Peter speaks of Christians being "kept by the *power* of God through faith unto salvation;" and of God having given us "according to His divine *power,*" "all things that pertain unto life and godliness."

Here then, as before, I conclude that an endowment is vouchsafed to us, not moral, yet internal, so as fitly to answer and corroborate the description I have already given of "the gift of righteousness."

However, certain as this is, I do not at all deny, that by the gift of righteousness is sometimes meant in Scripture an inherent quality of mind, or holi-

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 18—20; iii. 20. Phil. iii. 2 Thes. i. 11. 2 Tim. i. 8.

1 Pet. i. 5. 2 Pet. i. 3.

ness, just as justification has already been shown to stand for a renewal as well as an imputation. How this is, I shall now in conclusion explain; and in so doing may perhaps throw some additional light on that parallel mode of speaking also.

The Sacred Presence, then, which is our justification in God's sight, sanctifies the while, as a light illuminating a room; and as the room is called light from that which enlightens it, so the soul, as being renewed, inherits the titles of the gift which renews it. Thus, for instance, the figure in the text, which properly belongs to Christ's inward glory, is applied by Himself to our inherent righteousness in the Parable of the wedding garment. In like manner the words truth, life, light, and many more, are transferred from Him to His work in us; or in other words, justification is ascribed, not to Him, but to what we become through Him.

Now the principle of such alleged confusion, (for so men speak, not of course meaning to include Scripture under their censure, though they do,) the principle on which this transference takes place is merely this:—the gift of righteousness, not being a gift till it is given, cannot be separated in our speaking of it, from its giving, that is, from its entrance and admission into us, and its occupation of our nature. It cannot come to us except by forcing a way in, overcoming pride and sloth, penetrating and securing to itself a portion of us, and extending

itself beyond itself; so that as it is really found in the soul, it cannot be viewed distinct from these realized effects, which in other words are renewal, and thus our renewal has a share in our justification.

Here some illustrations may be useful. For instance, to take that in the text:—The garment of salvation put on us, is such as to cleave to us, and to tend to become part of us; what was at first a covering merely, becomes our flesh. The glory of the Divine Nature, of which St. Peter says we are partakers, first hides our deformity, then removes it.

Again: our Saviour asked the brother Apostles, whether they were able to drink of His cup, and to be baptized in His baptism? Can a draught be separated from the drinking it, or a bath from being bathed in it? In like manner the gift of righteousness, which is justification as given, is renewal as received.

Or again: the seal, mould, or stamp with which our souls are marked as God's *coin*, impresses His *image* upon them. He claims them as His own by the signature of holiness; or He justifies us by renewing. How natural is this continuance of the one idea into the other, is shown in the literal sense of the words which I am using figuratively. The word *mark* stands both for the instrument marking, and the figure which it causes. So again, the word *copy* sometimes stands for the pattern,

sometimes for the imitation. In like manner, *image* sometimes means the original, sometimes the duplicate or representation. Thus in one text, man is said to be formed “*after* the image of God;” in another he is said to *be* “the image of Christ.” And in like manner, though the inward law commonly stands for the new creature, yet it may be said to justify, as standing also for that Archetype of which the new creature is the copy. And again, we may be said to be “saved” by “the ingrafted Word,” that is, the Word which *is* ingrafted, but which for all that does not cease to be what it was when first imparted, the presence of Christ.

The following passage in the Book of Wisdom well illustrates in the case of the attribute from which it takes its name, what I would enforce,—the indivisible union between the secret gift of righteousness imparted, and viewed as propagated in us as renewal.

“All men,” says the writer, “have one entrance into life, and the like going out. Wherefore I prayed, and understanding was given me; I called upon God, and the spirit of wisdom came to me. I preferred her before sceptres and thrones, and esteemed riches nothing in comparison of her. Neither compared I unto her any precious stone, because all gold in respect of her is as a little sand, and silver shall be counted as clay before her. I loved her above health and beauty, and chose to have her instead of light; for the light that cometh

from her never goeth out. All good things together came to me with her, and innumerable riches in her hands. And I rejoiced in them all, because wisdom goeth before them; and I knew not that she was the mother of them. I learned diligently and do communicate her liberally; I do not hide her riches; for she is a treasure unto men that never faileth, which they that use *become the friends of God*, being commended for the gifts that come from learning<sup>1</sup>."

Now, if this were all that were said on the subject, unbecoming complaints would be uttered in some schools of religion, that in this passage an internal gift, called wisdom by the writer, was considered to make us "friends of God," or justify; and a tendency to Pelagianism would be freely imparted, and an ignorance that justification was God's act, in spite of the strong expression which occurs of the spirit of wisdom *coming* to the writer, which surely implies a Divine Agent, not an implanted excellence, and in spite of our Lord's plain declaration, that we *are* His friends, if we do what He commands us. However, as the description proceeds, it will be found that the Wisdom spoken of is no created gift, no inward renewal, but none other than the Eternal Word Himself, who afterwards took flesh, in order thus mysteriously to be imparted; and, who was announced before-hand in

<sup>1</sup> Wisdom vii. 6—14.



terms which inspired Apostles afterwards adopted. The sacred writer, then, for so surely he may well be called, considering what he says, proceeds as follows:—"In Her" [Wisdom] "is an understanding spirit, holy, *only-begotten*, manifold, subtle, lively, clear, undefiled, plain, incorruptible, a lover of good, keen, free to act, beneficent, kind to man, stedfast, sure, free from care, *all-powerful*, *all-surveying*, and pervading all intellectual, pure, and subtle spirits. For Wisdom is more moving than any motion; She passeth and goeth through all things because of her pureness. For she is the *Breath of the power of God*, and a *pure Effluence from the glory of the Almighty*; therefore can no defiled thing fall into her. For she is the *Brightness of the Everlasting Light*, the *unspotted Mirror of the power of God*, and the *Image of his goodness*. And being but One, She can do all things; and *remaining in herself*, She *maketh all things new*; and in all ages *entering into holy souls* She maketh them friends of God and prophets<sup>1</sup>."

One more illustration shall be adduced; justification is the setting up of the Cross within us. That Cross, reared by almighty hands, is our safeguard from all evil; dropping grace, and diffusing heavenly virtue all around, and hallowing the spot where before there was but strife and death. It is our charm against numberless dangers ghostly and bodily; it is our refuge against our accusing

<sup>1</sup> Wisdom vii. 22—27.

and seducing foe, our protection from the terror by night and the arrow by day, and our passport into the Church invisible. But how does this Cross become ours? I repeat, by being given; and what is this giving, in other words, but our being marked with it? Let us see what this implies. We know that in Baptism a cross is literally marked on the forehead. Now suppose, (to explain what I mean,) we were ordered to mark the cross, not with the finger, but with a sharp instrument. Then it would be a rite of blood. In such a case justification and *pain* would undeniably go together; they would be inseparable. You might separate them in idea, but in fact they would ever be one. One act would convey both the one and the other. If the invisible presence of the justifying Cross were conveyed to you *in* marking it visibly, you could not receive the justification without the pain. Justification would involve pain. Now it is in this way that justification actually does involve a spiritual circumcision, a crucifixion of the flesh, or sanctification. The entrance of Christ's sacred presence into the soul, which becomes our righteousness in God's sight, at the same time becomes righteousness in it. It makes us travail and be in pangs with righteousness, and work with fear and trembling. Such is the account given of it by the son of Sirach; who uses the same image of Wisdom already referred to;—"If a man," he says, "commit himself to Her, he shall inherit Her, and his generation shall hold

Her in possession. For at the first She will walk with him *by crooked ways*, and *bring fear and dread* upon him, and *torment him with Her discipline*, till She may trust his soul, and try him by Her laws<sup>1</sup>.”

Now it is very necessary to insist upon this, for a reason which has come before us in other shapes already. It is the fashion of the day to sever these two from one another, which God has joined, the seal and the impression, justification and renewal. You hear men speak of glorying in the Cross of Christ, who are utter strangers to the notion of the Cross as actually applied to them in water and blood, in holiness and pain. They think the Cross can be theirs *without* being applied,—without its coming near them,—while they keep at a distance from it, and only gaze at it. They think individuals are justified immediately by the great Atonement,—justified by Christ’s death, not as St. Paul says, by means of His Resurrection,—justified by what they consider *looking* at His death. Because the Brasen Serpent in the wilderness healed by being looked at, they consider that Christ’s Sacrifice saves by the mind’s contemplating it. This is what they call casting themselves upon Christ,—coming before Him simply and without self-trust, and being saved by faith. Surely we ought so to come to Christ; surely we must believe; surely we must look; but the question is, in what form and manner He gives

<sup>1</sup> Ecclus. iv. 16, 17.

Himself to us; and it will be found that, when He comes, glorious as He is Himself, pain and self-denial are his attendants. Gazing on the Brasen Serpent did not heal; but God's giving invisibly the gift of health to those who gazed. So also justification is wholly the work of God; it comes from God to us; it is a power exerted on our souls by Him, as the healing of the Israelites was a power exerted on their bodies. The gift must be brought *near* to us; it is not like the Brasen Serpent, a mere external, material, local sign; it is a spiritual gift, and so admits of being applied to us individually. Christ's Cross does not justify by being looked at, but by being applied; not by being gazed at in faith, but by being actually set up within us, and that not by our act, but by God's invisible grace. Men sit, and gaze, and speak of the great Atonement, and think this is appropriating it; not more truly than kneeling to the material cross itself is appropriating it. Men say that faith is an apprehending, and applying; faith cannot really apply it; man cannot make the Saviour of the world his own; the Cross must be brought home to us, not in word, but in power, and this is the work of the Spirit. This is justification; but when imparted to the soul, it draws blood, it heals, it purifies, it glorifies.

With one or two passages from St. Paul in behalf of what I have said, I will bring this Lecture to an end. We shall find from the Apostle that the gift of the Justifying Cross as certainly involves an in-

ward crucifixion as a brand or stamp causes sharp pain, or the cure of a bodily ailment consists in a sharp operation.

For instance, writing to the Galatians, he says, "God forbid that I should glory save in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ <sup>1</sup>;"—what Cross? He goes on to tell us;—"by whom," or, rather, by which "*the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world,*"—the Cross on Calvary, that is, issuing and completed in its reflection on his own soul. An inward crucifixion was the attendant *process* of justification. This passage is the more remarkable, because St. Paul is alluding to certain bodily wounds and sufferings, *as* being actually the mode, in his case, in which the Cross had been applied. He says to his converts, "the Jews compel you to be circumcised, but we Christians glory in another kind of circumcision, painful indeed, but more profitable. Our circumcision consists in the marks, the brands, of the Lord Jesus; which effect for us, what circumcision can but typify, which interest us in His life while interesting us in His passion. The saving Cross crucifies us in saving.

Again; in a previous passage of the same Epistle, "A man is not justified by the Law, but by the faith of Christ <sup>2</sup>." Is this a light and pleasant doctrine? is then justification given without pain and discomfort on our part? so freely given as to be easily—

<sup>1</sup> Gal. vi. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. ii. 16. 20.

so fully as to be lavishly? fully and freely doubtless, yet conferring fully what man does not take freely. He proceeds;—"I am *crucified with Christ*, nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me." O easy and indulgent doctrine, to have the bloody Cross reared within us, and our heart transfixed, and our arms stretched out upon it, and the sin of our nature slaughtered and cast out.

Again; in the same Epistle, "They that are Christ's, have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts<sup>1</sup>." It is remarkable that these three passages are from that Epistle in which the Apostle peculiarly insists on justification being through faith, not through the Law. It is plain he never thought of faith as the direct and absolute instrument of it. It should be observed how coincident this doctrine is with our Saviour's command to His disciples to "*take up their Cross* and follow Him." Our crosses are the lengthened shadow of the Cross on Calvary.

To the same purport are the following texts:—"We are buried with Him by baptism into death . . . our old man is crucified with Him."—"Put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof."—"Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body; for we which live

<sup>1</sup> Gal. v. 24.

are alway delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh <sup>1</sup>."

The Cross, then, in which St. Paul gloried was not (what the word will literally mean, and which the Romanists sometimes seem to make it mean), the *material* cross on which Christ suffered,—as little is it (what persons among ourselves would take it to be, without even the plea of being literal), the actual *Sacrifice* on the cross, but it is that Sacrifice coming in power to him who has faith in it, and converting body and soul into a sacrifice. It is the Cross, realised, present, living in him, sealing him, separating him from the world, sanctifying him, afflicting him. Thus the great Apostle clasped it to his heart, though it pierced it through like a sword; held it fast in his hands, though it cut them; reared it aloft, preached it, exulted in it. And thus we in our turn are allowed to hold it, commemorating and renewing individually by the ministry of the Holy Ghost, the death and resurrection of our Lord.

But enough has been said on the matter in hand. On the whole, then, I conclude as follows: that though the Gift which justifies us is, as we have seen, a something distinct from us and lodged in us, yet it involves in its idea its own work

<sup>1</sup> Rom. vi. 4; xiii. 14. 2 Cor. iv. 10, 11.

in us, and (as it were) takes up into it that renovation of the soul, those holy deeds and sufferings, which are as if a radiance streaming from it.



## LECTURE VIII.

---

### RIGHTEOUSNESS VIEWED AS A GIFT AND AS A QUALITY.

---

GAL. ii. 20.

“I am crucified with Christ, nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me.”

I NOW propose to contrast the view of justification which has been drawn out in the last Lectures with that to which Romanists seem to be committed from the wording of the Tridentine Decree, to which they would fain confine the Fathers, into which some of our own writers have virtually fallen, and which, moreover, is unfairly imputed to many of our standard divines. As to the Protestant doctrine, on the other hand, which was a third in the discussion, I cannot go more deeply into what seems to me a system of words without ideas, and of distinctions without arguments. If I am told, in reply, that such a view of it arises from want of spiritual perception, such persons as discern not heavenly

objects, not understanding heavenly words, I answer, that, though undoubtedly divine words express divine things, and divine things are hidden from all but divinely enlightened minds, yet this will not account for a man's stumbling at words which are not divine. Luther's words are his own, reasoned out from Scripture, which every one of us has equal right to do. If I receive the doctrine of the Church Catholic as divine, it is as guaranteed by many concordant witnesses, which converge to one place and one time, the day of Pentecost, when the Apostles were with one accord assembled in one place<sup>1</sup>. And if I bow to some individual teacher, as Irenæus or Augustine, it is not from a notion of his infallibility, but from a sense of the authority of men of holy and mortified lives, where God has not otherwise spoken. But what binds me to yield a submission to the sixteenth century, which I with-

<sup>1</sup> "Nay, moreover, I shall persuade myself, that from this one instance (among many) you will learn from henceforth the modesty of submitting your judgment to that of the Catholic doctors, when they are found generally to concur in the interpretation of a text of Scripture, *how absurd soever that interpretation may at first appearance seem to be*; for upon a diligent search you will find, that 'aliquid latet, quod non patet,' there is a mystery in the bottom; and that what at the first view seemed even ridiculous, will afterwards appear to be a most important truth. Let them, therefore, who reading the Fathers are prone to laugh at that in them which they do not presently understand, seriously consider, 'quanto suo periculo id faciant.'"—Bull, *State of Man before the Fall*, p. 99.

hold even from the second? to measure spiritual discernment in myself and others, by our apprehension, not of Scripture, but of comparatively modern treatises? to accept terms and distinctions which, over and above their human origin, have no internal consistence,—no external proof,—no part or lot in Antiquity; which, in short, have but a good object in their favour, the overthrow of Romanism? Surely the reverse of wrong is not right; yet this doctrine mainly rests its claims upon the errors of a rival doctrine, assumes itself true because it is serviceable, proves itself Scriptural by proving Romanism unscriptural, conceives it has a meaning viewed out of Romanism, and thinks to live and flourish though Romanism come to an end.

On these grounds, of the three doctrines above drawn out,—of the righteousness of Christ imputed only, imparted only, and both imputed and imparted by His real indwelling,—I omit the first in the comparison between them, which naturally follows, as being partly negative, partly extravagant. It is a negative statement to say that justification is not by works; it is extravagant to say that it is by faith as the primary and sole instrument. Whether one says nothing positive, or nothing literal <sup>1</sup>, in neither

<sup>1</sup> Protestantism is what mathematicians call a *function* of Romanism. The most judicious defender of its chief doctrine, justification by the apprehensive power of faith, Melancthon, whom our Church follows, makes it intelligible and true by admitting that it is not to be taken literally, but as a mode of

case there is room for discussion, which claims to touch and handle, to sift, to weigh, to adjust, to distribute. There is nothing precise, nothing to grapple with, when we are told, for instance, that faith justifies without reference to its being a right and good principle—that it justifies as an instrument not as a condition,—that love is its inseparable accident, yet not its external criterion,—that good works are necessary, but not to be called so in controversy or popular preaching<sup>1</sup>; and that nothing in us constitutes our being justified. Such a doctrine is, what it makes justification to be, a shadow.

I proceed, then, to suggest some points of contrast between the two other views of justification mentioned, the doctrine of the justifying Presence, and that of justifying obedience, and the latter, as found among ourselves; for there certainly has been a school of divines in our Church who by a very different road have practically approached the doc-

symbolising a protest against the doctrine of human merit. The Confession of Augsburg (Ed. 1538), which is his composition, says, *Jam bonas mentes nihil offendat novitas Paulinæ figuræ, "Fide justificamur, si intelligant proprie de misericordia dici;"* on which Bull observes, *Ex ipsorum doctrina liquido liquet . . . figurata quidem sed non incommoda locutione dici posse, nos sola fide justificari.*—Harm. Apost. ii. 18. § 6.

<sup>1</sup> Dav. de Just. Habit. 31, who observes also, *Multi qui recipiunt hanc propositionem, "Bona opera sunt fidelibus necessaria," rejiciunt et damnant eandem, si hoc additamentum "Sunt necessaria ad justificationem," vel "sunt necessaria ad salutem," . . . E contra reperirentur e Protestantibus nonnulli, qui haud verentur concedere, bona opera esse ad salutem necessaria.*

trine of Rome on this subject. What Rome has done by exalting the effects of grace, some among ourselves have done by disparaging its sacramental means. Rome raises man to the capacity, they have reduced him to the necessity, of being justified by his obedience. It is unnecessary to mention names; but I allude to a school of divines who rose in Charles the Second's time, and have exercised an extensive influence in our Church since 1688. Those who conceive duly of the gift of justification, exalt the sacramental instruments of possessing it, as feeling that nothing short of means ordained of God can convey what is so much above them. Thus their glowing language about the Sacraments is but the measure of their estimation of their spiritual privileges. And if they go on to say that obedience justifies, it never occurs to them to suppose that they can be taken to speak of any thing but the state of soul in which the heavenly gift resides, by which it is retained, not that which causes, or procures, or effects it<sup>1</sup>. Thus the high doctrine of the Sacraments is a safeguard against the doctrine of the Tridentine decree; nay, perhaps, even in the case of persons who are unhappily committed to it. But

<sup>1</sup> Davenant grants as much as this:—"Bona opera justificatorum sunt ad salutem necessaria *necessitate ordinis* non causalitatis, vel planius, *ut via ordinata ad vitam æternam*, non ut causæ meritorix vitæ æternæ." He also freely grants that they are "*media seu conditiones sine quibus Deus non vult justificationis gratiam in hominibus conservare.*" c. 31.

they who see nothing supernatural and mysterious in the Gift, though in words they refer it to the Sacraments, yet practically associate it with that which they do see, and which seems to them naturally connected with it, their own obedience. Not believing in any true sense that they are temples of the Holy Ghost, inhabited by Christ, and members of His Body, they consider their justification properly to consist in works, because they do not discern, they do not believe in any thing else, in which it can consist. Justification by obedience, then, is their distinguishing tenet; this is also the doctrine of the English Church, as it is of St. James; but much more than this besides. To put a parallel case, one man might say that our bodily *life* consisted in *organization*, or in a certain state of the nerves, or in the circulation of the blood; and another might ascribe it to *the presence of the soul*. The latter doctrine is the former and something besides; but the former by itself is defective. He who holds the former is not wrong, but he who holds only the former. Religious men may ascribe life to the heart, and thought to the brain; but those who say these are the only constituting causes of life and thought are materialists. In like manner St. Austin and others who, though they place justification in renewal, refer renewal to the indwelling presence of the Holy Ghost, are not to be compared with those who enlarge on what is seen, and explain away the mystery. This analogy holds

in many other points; but I confine it to what is before us. I say, then, justification by obedience is any how true; it is sound doctrine, if we hold another doctrine too; it is defective, if we omit it; it becomes erroneous, if we deny it.

When it is held exclusively among ourselves, it often takes the following shape: that God accepts our sincere obedience, as if it was every thing; or that God will save us if we do our part; or that God has done His part in Baptism, and now we must do ours. Such statements are most true and Scriptural, if they are not meant to deny (what may be called) our Sacramental life, the fount of grace which Holy Baptism has stored within us, and the awful realities of Holy Communion, those invisible facts (as I may call them) in which we stand, in which we breathe, on which we feed. For if our Life be verily and indeed hid with Christ in God, it follows, that though we are bound to do our part and work with Him, such co-operation is the condition, not of our acceptance, or pardon, but of the continuance of that sacred Presence which is our true righteousness, as an immediate origin. I believe this distinction is no matter of words, but real and practical, as a few remarks will show.

Now, when you teach as follows, that Christ's Atoning Death, eighteen hundred years since, and our individual Baptism in our infancy, so changed our state in God's sight once for all, that henceforth salvation depends on ourselves, on our doing

our part in the Covenant,—that those gracious events put us indeed on a new footing, wiped out what was passed, set us off fair, and are still operative as gaining for us heaven, if obedient, and present aids if believing, but that faith and obedience are the conditions of grace and glory,—true as all this is to the letter, yet if nothing more is added, we shall seem, in spite of whatever we say concerning the Atonement and the influences of the Holy Ghost if duly sought, to be resting a man's salvation on himself, and to be making him the centre of the religious system <sup>1</sup>. All has been done for him ages ago, or when he was an infant; and all that *has* been done, seems as though a condition

<sup>1</sup> “ God is pleased to grant remission of all past sins, for the sake of His Blessed Son, on account of faith only; but He requires from those, whom He thus graciously receives into His favour, an implicit obedience to His commands in future; if they *disobey, their pardon is cancelled, the state of acceptance forfeited, and liability to punishment ensues.*”—p. 124. . . . “ If he really performed these conditions, he continued in a state of justification, and if he persevered to the end of his life, his salvation was secured. But if he did not perform these conditions,” &c.—p. 134. The continuance of justification “ depends upon their abstinence from those sins which are forbidden, and upon the practice of those virtues which are enjoined in the Gospel. By the indulgence of any criminal passion, or by the neglect of any practicable duty, the state of justification is forfeited.”—p. 142.—*Tomlin on Calvinism*. It is not insinuated that the author is at all wanting in explicit statements concerning the influences of divine grace, nor that what he says is not true, but the prominence he gives to this view of justification, makes



of his existing at all, as benefits on which he cannot be said to repose his mind, because they are presupposed in his being himself, which do not come to him from without, nor admit of being viewed by him objectively. I would not say that this doctrine will so affect men of high religious attainments; but that, viewed as the multitude will view it, it does not come up to the idea of the Gospel Creed as contained in Scripture, does not fix our thoughts on Christ in that full and direct way of which Scripture sets the pattern, as being not only the Author of salvation to the whole race, but the Saviour of each of us individually through every stage of our Christian course, and in every act of our lives. This seems to be the real meaning of the popular saying that "Christ ought to be preached," and of the anxiety felt by a portion of the community to maintain the supremacy and all-sufficiency of His righteousness.

Hence the charge, not unfounded as regards Romanism, that it views or tends to view the influences of grace, not as the operations of a Living God, but as a something to bargain about, and buy, and traffick with, as if religion were, not an approach to Things above us, but a commerce with

the doctrine what would popularly be called *cold*; approximates it, theologically speaking, to the *unica formalis causa* of the Romanists; and, when analysed, will be found to arise from a neglect of the doctrine of the Real Presence.

our equals concerning things we can master<sup>1</sup>. And this is the cause of the suspicions entertained in many quarters against those who in any sense teach obedience justifies, as if it implied we had something in ourselves to rely upon; whereas if, as I would maintain, the Presence of Christ is our true righteousness, first conveyed into us in Baptism, then more sacredly and mysteriously in the Eucharist, we have really no inherent righteousness at all. What seems to be inherent, may be more properly called *adherent*, depending, as it does, wholly and absolutely upon the Divine Indwelling, not ours to keep, but as heat in a sickly person, sustained by means external to itself. If the Pre-

<sup>1</sup> Disdaining to be anticipated by God Himself, [the soul of man] prevents Him in His supernatural gifts by a previous display of her own meritorious deeds, challenging, *as a congruous right*, that which only could have been otherwise conferred as a favour undeserved. Approaching the throne of mercy, not with a conscious sense of frailty, but with a confident persuasion of her inherent dignity, she wrests from a somnivolent Deity, hitherto but a slumbering spectator of her efforts, an ornamental grace, enabling her *to merit that reward by condignity*, which, without any defect of virtue, but *merely by the appointed order of things*, she is incapable of meriting by congruity. Laurence, Bampt. Lect. 4. quoting in the notes the following striking passage of Luther. "Quisque Monachus hanc habet imaginationem. Ego per observantiam Sanctæ Regulæ possum mereri gratiam de congruo; operibus autem, quæ post acceptam gratiam facio, tantum meritum accumulare possum, ut non tantum mihi sufficiat pro consequenda vita æterna, sed etiam hoc aliis communicare ac vendere possim."

sence of Christ were to leave us, our renovation would go with it, and to say we are justified by renovation, only means that we are interested in Him from which it flows, that we dwell beneath the overshadowing Power of Him who is our Justifier.

And further, it is not near such a consoling yet awful doctrine to say, that we *have* had mercy and *shall* have reward, and are at present in some measure in a middle state, expected to move and promised grace upon moving, as to know, which I conceive is the full truth of the Gospel, that that perfection, which is as yet but begun in our own natures, is anticipated, pledged, and in one sense realized within us by a present gift, and that the centre on which our thoughts must be fixed, and the foundation from which our exertions must proceed, are not ourselves, but His Presence, in whom “we live, and move, and have our being.” And though it is most necessary to exhibit to men the severer side of the Gospel, and dwell on their duties, and responsibilities, and the conditions on which grace is given, yet this is but one side; and when it is exclusively presented to Christians, as it is in the school of divinity in question, a complaint will not unfairly arise against it as cold and narrow, and unlike what it is popular to call “the freeness and fulness” of the Gospel.

And here I am reminded of another objection which may be urged against this same school of theology, viz. that it disparages certain doctrines

which are very prominent in Scripture, those of predestination and election. The Gospel is a free gift; it comes to the unworthy, to those who have done nothing to earn it, who can do nothing right towards God before He shows mercy towards them. That spontaneous mercy is abundantly taught in the doctrine of the Atonement itself and the ordinance of Baptism; but, these being past events in our own case, and as if conditions of our existence rather than objects presented to us, the Covenant of God's unsearchable grace becomes one of man's free election; and man has rather to choose Heaven than Heaven man. The great mercies of God are done and over; and we have now to act, if we would receive additional benefits. Thus there is a tendency, in this view of the Gospel, which has been realized in our Church, to put out of sight the doctrines of election and sovereign grace; a circumstance which by itself would separate it, in spite of partial resemblance, from the teaching of St. Austin, who is known to have laid an unprecedented stress on those doctrines, and to have given them a new direction.

Moreover, it is no slight evil in the mode of teaching here censured, that by withdrawing a portion of truth, countenance is given to those false Protestant views now so popular among us. Truth always avenges itself; and if kept in bondage, it breaks forth irregularly, burying itself with the strong man in the overthrow of its oppressors. And

so, if our Church has at any time forgotten the Living Presence conveyed in the Sacraments, an opening has been at once made for the meagre and artificial doctrine of a nominal righteousness. So many passages are there which speak of the Atonement as still living in Christians, that if we will not enforce them literally, we must be content to hear them explained of an imputation of it in God's dealings with us, or a contemplation of it by our faith.

I say, the view of justification taken by Romanists and by a school of divines among ourselves, tends to fix the mind on self, not on Christ, whereas that which I have advocated as Scriptural and Catholic, buries self in the absorbing vision of a present, an indwelling God. And as so doing, it is a more awakening and fearful doctrine even, than that mode of teaching which insists mainly and directly on our responsibilities and duties. For to what does it point as the great and immediate condition of justification? to faith and holiness of our own? or, on the other hand, to the mere title of righteousness, which cannot be literally approached or profaned by us? no,—but to the glorious Shekinah of the Word Incarnate, as to the true wedding garment in which the soul must be dressed. Does not such a view far increase, instead of diminishing our responsibilities? does it not make us more watchful and more obedient, while it comforts and transports us? Surely it takes our minds off ourselves in order to fill us with triumph, awe, and godly fear at what we are and what

we hold within us. When are we the more likely to dread sinning, when we know merely we ought to dread it, or when see the exceeding peril of it? When are we the more likely to keep awake and be sober, when we have a present treasure now to lose, or a distant reward to gain? Is it not more dreadful, when evil thoughts assail us, more elevating and ennobling in affliction, more kindling in danger and hardship, to reflect, (if the words may be said) that we bear God within us, as the Martyr Ignatius expresses it, that He is grieved by us or suffers with us according as we carry or renounce His Cross,—I say has not this thought more of persuasiveness in it to do and suffer for Him than the views of doctrine which have spread among us? is it not more constraining than that which considers that the Gospel comes to us in name, not in power; deeper, and more sacred than a second, which makes its heavenly grace a matter of purchase and trade; more glowing than a third, which depresses it almost to the chill temperature of natural religion?

Such are some of the doctrinal respects in which what I consider the Scriptural view of justification recommends itself to the Christian mind. It is open however at first sight to one objection, which some persons may think not inconsiderable; but which I believe, when examined, will be found rather to be an additional argument in its favour. To this I shall now direct attention.

It may be said then that the doctrine of righteousness in the Indwelling Presence of Christ labours under this difficulty, that, supposing it true, the word justification has different senses in the Old and New Testament. If under the Gospel it consists in the inward manifestation of the Incarnate Word, therefore, this gift being peculiar to the Gospel, Abraham (for instance) who was justified, was justified some other way; whereas St. Paul certainly does liken the one justification to the other, as if whatever the word meant in the Old Testament such it meant in the New. For instance, it is said that faith "was imputed to Abraham for righteousness; now it was not written for his sake alone that it was imputed to him, but for us also, to whom it shall be imputed." Here, it may be objected, that faith is said to justify us, *as* it justified Abraham; which it is supposed to do both in the system of the Romanists and of the Protestants, but not in that which has been here explained. Whether faith be taken as a mere instrument, as the Lutherans say, or for a sanctifying element as the Romanists, in either case righteousness means divine favour; whereas, (it may be objected,) if it means under the Gospel the being a temple of Christ, this could not be Abraham's state, who lived before the Son became the Christ; and then the question arises what did Abraham's justification consist in, and why is it compared to ours?

As far as this objection relates to an interpreta-

tion of Scripture, I do not consider it requires much notice; since all that St. Paul says is that righteousness, or acceptableness, is imputed to Abraham and us on faith, which I take as literally as Romanist or Lutheran; the distinction between Abraham and us relating to a further point, viz. *what* this righteousness is under the Gospel; or *in what way* this acceptableness is conveyed, whether by a mere act of God's will, or by a positive gift on His part? There is nothing contrary to St. Paul's argument in supposing that what was conveyed before Christ came in one way, should under the Gospel come to us in another and more precious way. For instance, animal life belongs to men and to brutes; but, however it exists in the case of the latter, in the former it lies in the special gift of a rational soul. However, let us consider the state of the case more attentively.

Now this circumstance, which at first sight seems a difficulty, that the attribute of righteousness, however conveyed to the Old Saints, should since Christ's coming be the attendant on a divine gift, even His own sacred Presence, will in truth be found, as I have said, an argument in favour of the doctrine. For such a transformation of shadows into substances, and human acts into divine endowments, far from being anomalous, is the very rule of the New Covenant. Christ came for this very purpose, to gather together in one all the elements of good dispersed throughout the world, to make them His



own, to illuminate them with Himself, to reform and refashion them into Himself. He came to make a new and better beginning of all things than Adam had been, and to be a fountain-head from which all good henceforth might flow. Hence it is said that “in the dispensation of the fulness of times” Almighty God “gathered together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth<sup>1</sup>.” How He became a new commencement to things in heaven, we know not; nor know we adequately in what way He recapitulated or ordered anew things on earth. But this we know, that, the world being under the dominion of Satan, and truth and goodness in it being but as gems in the mine, or rather as metal in the ore, He came to elicit, to disengage, to combine, to purify, to perfect. And, further than this, He came to new-create,—to begin a new line, and construct a new kingdom on the earth; that what had as yet lain in sin, might become what it was at the first, or more than that. In His incomprehensible mercy He designed that man, instead of being a child of wrath, should be quickened and impregnated with Divine Life; and sooner than this should not be, (as the Creed says,) He was made man. He took on Him our nature, that in God that nature might revive and be restored; that it might be new born, and after being perfected on the Cross, might im-

<sup>1</sup> Eph. i. 10.

part that which itself was, as an incorruptible seed, for the life of all who receive it in faith, till the end of time. Hence He is called in Scripture the Beginning of the Creation of God, the First-begotten of the dead, the First Fruits of the Resurrection.

If this be so, we see how wide and essential a difference there is, there must be, between good men before His coming and good men after. Whatever they were, however high in God's favour, however influenced by God's secret aids, they could not be partakers of that which as yet did not exist; the Body and Blood of the Incarnate Son. God had His favoured servants then as afterwards, and had His own inscrutable ways both of blessing them at the time and of incorporating them afterwards into His Christ. But taking a general view of human nature, we may say that its highest piety and devotion, out of Him, though the fruit (as it surely is) of divine assistance, is but the poor effort after that righteousness which it never can really reach, and which He is. Its services at best are but an imitation, not a likeness of Him. They do not tend to that perfection which they testify; like the moonlight which never reaches, though it comes from the radiance of the sun. They may be shadows and auguries of God's merciful purposes; but they cannot rise out of their feeble selves, and claim to be His work, not man's. Such is human nature in its

fallen state; but at length its Redeemer came. He left His Father's courts, He was manifested, He spake; and His voice went out into all lands. He has taken to Himself His great power and reigned: and whereas an enemy is the god and tyrant of this world, as Adam made it, so, as far as He occupies it, does He restore it to Himself. Henceforth He is the one principle of life in all His servants, who are but His organs. The Jewish Church looked towards Him; the Christian speaks and acts from Him. What is behind Him is dark, but all that is after Him is illuminated. The Church, before His coming, offered to Him material elements "which perish with the using;" but now He has sent His Spirit to fill them with Himself, and to make them living and availing sacrifices to the Father. Figures have become means of grace, shadows are substances, types are Sacraments in Him. What before were decent ordinances and pious observances, have now not only a meaning but a virtue. Water could but wash the Body in the way of nature; but now it acts towards the cleansing of the soul. "Wine which maketh glad the heart of man," and "bread which strengthens man's heart," nay the "oil which maketh him a cheerful countenance," henceforth are more than means of animal life, and savour of Him. Hands raised in blessing, the accents of the voice of man, which before could but symbolize the yearnings of

human nature, or avail for lower benefits, have now become the "unutterable intercessions" of the Spirit, and the touch and the breath of the Incarnate Son. The Church has become His Body, her priests His delegates, her people His members.

This is what Christ has done by His coming; but observe, *while* He did all this for His Church, He claimed all He did *as* His own. Henceforth whatever is done, is His doing, and it is called what it is. As He is the unseen Source, so must He be acknowledged as the Agent, the present Object of worship and thanksgiving in all that is done; and His instruments are not even so much as instruments, but only the outward form of Him. Hence it is said, that of Him "the whole family in heaven and earth is named<sup>1</sup>;" or more literally, as the Latin version has it, "every headship or fathership is named;" every seed, origin, principle of goodness, truth, and authority in the Church, being henceforth verily and indeed, not itself merely, but the Word Incarnate. All is superseded by Him, and transmuted into Him. Before He came there were many masters, but henceforth only One; before He came, many fathers, but He is the One Father of the coming age, as the prophet styles Him; before He came, all to whom the word of God came, were called gods, but He is the One God manifested in the flesh; before He came, there were many angelic appearances with the name of God on them, but

<sup>1</sup> Paternitas. Eph. iii. 15.

now the great Angel of the Covenant is alone to be worshipped; before He came, there were many priests who had infirmity, offering sacrifices year by year continually, but now there is but One High Priest, "who is set on the right hand of the throne of the majesty in the heavens, a minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man<sup>1</sup>;" before, there were innumerable sacrifices of bulls and calves which could never perfect the worshippers, now One Immaculate Lamb who taketh away the sin of the world; before, there were judges, kings, and rulers of various ranks, but now there is but One King of kings, and Lord of lords in His kingdom. Those former kings, prophets, priests, and sacrifices, those masters, teachers, and fathers, not being from Him, were not claimed by Him as His; they were ordained according to the old constitution of nature; they were but little glorious, yet, what they were, they were in themselves, and had a sort of substantive existence, and gained somewhat by their functions. Their priests were real priests, sacrificing real propitiations, and gaining thereby real benefits, namely, temporal. Their cities of refuge were really sanctuaries, and saved from death of the body. Their kings were real representatives of God, and suffered and wrought for the real good of their people. There were mediators many, and prophets many, and atonements many. But now all is

<sup>1</sup> Heb. viii. 1, 2.

superseded by One, in whom all offices merge, who has absorbed into Himself all principality, power, might, and dominion, and every name that is named; who has put His holy and fearful Name upon all, who is in and through all things, and without whom nothing is good. He is the sole self-existing principle in the Christian Church, and every thing else is but a portion or declaration of Him. Not that now, as then, we may not speak of prophets, and rulers, and priests, and sacrifices, and altars, and saints, and that in a far higher and more spiritual sense than before, but that they are not any of them such of themselves: it is not they, but the grace of God that is in them. There is under the Gospel but One proper Priest, Prophet, and King, Altar, Sacrifice, and House of God. Unity is its characteristic sacrament; all grace flows from the One Head, and all life circulates in the members of One Body. And what is true of priests and sacrifices, is true of righteous and holy men. It is their very privilege thus to be taken into Christ, to exist in Christ, as in their mortal life they already "have their being" in God. They had indeed before what was more their own than they have now; but to what did it tend, and how far did it aspire? It aspired to earthly blessings, and it tended to an earthly end. Better surely to be the mere stones of the Everlasting Pavement, than the head of the corner in the Jewish Temple. Better to be the least in the Kingdom of Heaven, even than the

greatest before it of all that were born of women. Far better surely than Solomon in all his glory, is that chosen generation, that royal priesthood, that holy nation, that peculiar people, whose life is hid with Christ in God, who live because He lives in them, who are blessed because He is blessed, who are the fragrance of His breath, the myrrh, aloes, and cassia from His garments; nay, are one spirit with Him, as His dove, "His undefiled one," "His sister and spouse," "coming up from the wilderness leaning upon her Beloved."

Now to apply these remarks to our immediate subject, unless this has been sufficiently done in the course of them. If in other things Christ changed the application of words, it is surely but fitting and natural that He should have in a similar way changed the application of the words righteousness and justification. Priests, I have said, offered sacrifices under the Law: Christian Ministers also offer sacrifices, but it is their privilege to know that those sacrifices are not independent of Christ, or complete in themselves, but continuations, as it were, of His Sacrifice, and shadows cast from His Cross; and that though distinct as visible and literal acts, yet as being instinct with that which they commemorate, they are absorbed and vivified in it. And so in like manner the inherent righteousness of a true Christian, viewed as distinct from Christ's inward presence, is something real, and doubtless far higher than that of a Jew; but why should we

so degrade ourselves, so disparage our own high privilege, as to view it separately, to disjoin it from Him through whom we do it, to linger in the thought of it instead of tracing it back, to that which is its immediate source; as if a man were to praise the daylight, yet forget the sun? No, whatever might be the righteousness of the Jews, we certainly know what is ours; and it is what they could not have had; it is "Christ," our propitiation, "within us;" on it we rely, not on ourselves. It is our boast thus to retreat from the extreme manifestations of life, which is our sanctification, upon that Glory within us, which is its fount, and our true justification. It is our blessedness to have our own glory swallowed up in Christ's glory, and to consider our works and our holiness, to avail merely as securities for the continuance of that glory; not as things to be dwelt upon and made much of for their own sake, but as a sort of sacramental rite addressed to Him, for the sake of which He may be pleased still to illuminate us, as tokens that His grace is not in vain. And after all, what we are, whatever it is, could not avail, were it tried in the balance for more than this, to prove our earnestness and diligence. Even what is acceptable in us, is still so imperfect that the blood of Christ is necessary to complete what His Spirit has begun; and as His regenerating grace has infused sweetness into what was bitter, so must His mercifulness overlook the remaining bitterness in what He has infused of sweetness.



In this way, then, I would reply to what seems at first sight a specious argument, against what I consider to be the Catholic doctrine. It is a more simple theory, doubtless, to say that righteousness should be to the Christian what it was to the Jew; as it is a more simple theory that we should have real priests, sacrifices, and altars now. But those who believe that Christ has set up a new creation in unity, and that He Himself is the One principle in His Church of all grace and truth, will not be surprised to find that He has superseded the righteousness, as He has abolished the victims of the ancient time; and that as the grace of the Holy Eucharist is the Presence of Christ Crucified, so the justification of those who approach it is the In-dwelling of Christ risen and glorified.

## LECTURE IX.

---

### CHRIST'S RESURRECTION THE SOURCE OF JUSTIFICATION.

---

ROM. iv. 25.

“ Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.”

THAT our justification, or our being accounted righteous by Almighty God, consists in our being grafted into the Body, or made members of Christ, in God dwelling in us and our dwelling in God, and that the Holy Ghost is the gracious Agent in this wonderful work,—all this has been argued from Scripture in various ways; first, from righteousness being there spoken of as an inward gift; or, again, from the great gift of the Gospel (which righteousness confessedly is) being spoken of as inward; secondly, on the ground that if so high a privilege as God's indwelling be vouchsafed, it must necessarily involve justification as one of its benefits; thirdly, from righteousness being represented as an ornament of

the soul beyond nature, and such an endowment having actually been lost in Adam, from which it seemed to follow, that what is gained in Christ is a like ornament, which Scripture confirms by speaking of it as a glory and a power; and fourthly, from the analogy of such a view of justification to the doctrinal structure of the New Covenant. In the following Lecture, following up a consideration already touched upon, I shall treat the matter thus:—whatever is done to us by the Spirit is done within us; whatever is done in the Church since Christ's ascension, is done by the Spirit; from which it follows that our justification, being a present work, is an inward work and a work of the Spirit. This, I conceive, is supported by the text, among other passages of Scripture; for in saying that Christ *rose again* for our justification, it implies that justification is through that second Comforter whom that resurrection brought down from heaven. In considering this view of the subject, I shall, as in the last Lecture, appeal rather to the harmony of sacred doctrine and the light which the view in question throws upon particular texts, than to the passages of Scripture which prove it, that having been already incidentally done in the 2nd, 6th, and 7th Lectures.

Christ's work of mercy has two chief parts, as specified in the text; what He did for all men, what He does for each; what He did once for all, what He does for one by one continually; what

He did externally to us, what He does within us; what He did on earth, what He does in heaven; what He did in His own Person, what He does by His Spirit; His death, and the water and the blood after it; His meritorious sufferings, and the various gifts thereby purchased, of pardon, grace, reconciliation, renewal, holiness, spiritual communion; that is, His Atonement, and the application of His Atonement, or His Atonement and our justification; He atones by the offering of Himself on the Cross; and as certainly (which is the point before us) He justifies by the mission of His Spirit.

His Atonement is His putting away the wrath of God for our sins. In order to this, He took flesh; He accomplished it in His own Person, by His crucifixion and death. Justification is the application of this precious Atonement to this person or that person, and this He accomplishes by His Spirit. For He ceased, I say, to act towards us by His own hand from the day of His ascension; He sent His Spirit to take His place,—“I will not leave you orphans,” He says, “I will come unto you.”—“I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever<sup>1</sup>.” Whatever then is done in the Christian Church is done by the Spirit; Christ’s mission ended when He left the world: He was to come again, but by His Spirit. The Holy Spirit realizes and completes the redemption which Christ has wrought in essence and virtue.

<sup>1</sup> John xiv. 16—18.

If the justification, then, of a sinner be a continual work, a work under the New Covenant, it *must* be the Spirit's work and not Christ's. The Atonement for sin took place during His mission, and He was the sole Agent; the application of that Atonement takes place during the mission of His Spirit, who accordingly is the sole Agent in it.

We know nothing of the reasons of God's wonderful providences; why an Atonement was necessary, why the Son of God was the sacrifice, why that sacrifice must be applied in order to "wash away the sins" of individuals; let us accept what is given, adore God's wisdom, and be thankful and silent;—but, whatever be the deep reasons, this seems to be the rule of His counsels as to our justification; that, as the Atonement was a work of flesh and blood, a tangible, sensible work, wrought out in this material world, and not, as the heretics said of old, an imaginary act, the suffering (God forgive the blasphemy!) the suffering of a phantom, a mere appearance, (for such was the heresy which St. John and St. Paul especially opposed,) as Christ really "came in the flesh," which none but deceivers and antichrists can deny, and suffered in the real body and blood of man; so on the contrary the communication of this great and adorable Sacrifice to the individual Christian, is not the communication of that Body and Blood such as it was when shed upon the Cross, but, in a higher, glorified, and spiritual state. The Son of God suffered as the Man

Christ Jesus, "with strong crying and tears,"—"in weakness" and a body of "flesh;" the crucified Man Christ Jesus comes again to us in His Spirit. He came once, He ascended back, He has come again. He came first in the flesh; He has come the second time in the Spirit. He did not come the second time carnally, (as the Romanists seem to speak,) nor the first time in mere appearance, (as Simon the sorcerer, and the Gnostics said,) but He came first in the flesh, and secondly in the Spirit. As in God's counsels it was necessary for the Atonement that there should be a material, local, Sacrifice of the Son once for all: so for our individual justification, there must be a spiritual, omnipresent communication of that Sacrifice continually. There was but One Atonement; there are ten thousand justifications. What was offered "under Pontius Pilate" in flesh and blood, is partaken again and again in the power and virtue of the Spirit. God the Son atoned; God the Holy Ghost justifies.

Further; it would appear as if His going to the Father was, in fact, the same thing as His coming to us spiritually. I mean there is some mysterious unknown connexion between His departing in His own Person, and returning in the Person of His Spirit. He said unless He went, His Spirit would not come to us; as though His ascending and the Spirit's descending, if not the same act, yet were very closely connected, and admitted of being spoken of as the same. His rising, then, was the necessary condition of His

applying to His elect the virtue of that Atonement which His dying wrought for all men. While He was on the Cross, while in the tomb, while in hell, the treasure existed, the precious gift was perfected, but it lay hid; it was not yet available for its gracious ends; it was not diffused, communicated, shared in, enjoyed. Thus He died to purchase what He rose again to apply. "He died for our sins; He rose again for our justification;" He died in the flesh; He rose again "according to the Spirit of holiness," which, when risen, He also sent forth from Him, dispensing to others that life whereby He rose Himself. He atoned, I repeat, in His own Person; He justifies through His Spirit.

And here I have touched upon another part of the harmony of the Divine Dispensation, which may be profitably dwelt upon. He Himself was raised again and justified by the Spirit; and what was wrought in Him, is repeated in us who are His brethren, and the complement and ratification of His work. What took place in Him as an Origin, is continued on in the succession of those who inherit His fulness, and is the cause of its continuance. He is said to be "justified by the Spirit," as it would appear, because He was, by the Spirit, raised again, proved innocent, made to triumph over His enemies, declared the Son of God, and exalted on the holy Hill of Sion. It was said, "Thou art My Son, this day have I begotten Thee," in which words He was justified or recognized, and owned before the world

as the Dearly beloved of the Father. This, I say, was His justification; and ours consists in our regeneration also, and His was the beginning of ours. The Divine Life which raised Him, flowed over, and availed unto our rising again from sin and condemnation. The Spirit within His Sacred Manhood, reviving on the third day, only more powerful for His brief overthrow, changed It into Spirit, assimilating It to Itself, without His ceasing to be man, and imparted It to us to dwell as a new creating, transforming Power in our hearts. This was the gift bestowed on the Church upon His ascension; for while He remained on earth, though risen, it was still withheld. During that interval, too, if we may speak without presumption, He seems to have been in an intermediate state, passing by an orderly course from what He had been to what He is in glory. He was neither in His body of flesh, nor in His glorified body. He ate in the presence of His disciples; He suffered them to examine His hands and feet, and wounded side. Yet, on the other hand, He now appeared, and now vanished, came into the room, the doors being shut, and on one occasion said, "Touch Me not." When, however, on His ascension, He became a lifegiving Spirit, in the power of that Spirit He came to us, to justify us as He had been justified. Hence the force of St. Paul's expressions, which I elsewhere cited, concerning "the exceeding greatness of God's power to us-ward that believe according to the



working of His mighty power, which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead ;” and the blessedness of “ knowing Him and the power of His resurrection ;” and again, our being “ made alive together with Christ, and raised up together, and made to sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.”

Here I would observe of this part of the wonderful Economy of Redemption, that the will of God the Son and God the Holy Ghost has been so to act together, as to make it difficult for us creatures to discriminate what belongs to each respectively. Christ rises by His own power, yet the Holy Ghost is said to raise Him ; hence, the expression in St. Paul, “ according to the Spirit of Holiness,” as applied to His resurrection, may be taken to stand either for His Divine nature or for the Third Person in the Blessed Trinity. The case is the same as regards the mystery of the Incarnation itself. The Word of God descended into the Virgin’s womb, and framed for Himself a human tabernacle, yet the man so born was “ conceived of the Holy Ghost.” And hence some early writers seem to have doubted whether by “ the power of the Highest,” and “ the Holy Spirit,” the Angel Gabriel meant the Second or Third Divine Persons, whether He who took flesh may not be also considered as the Maker of that flesh which He took ; whether He who anointed the Manhood of the Saviour with the fulness of grace, was not rather the Godhead of the Saviour

Himself than the Holy Ghost<sup>1</sup>. I notice this merely by way of explaining myself, if in speaking upon this most sacred subject I have said, or may say any thing which would seem to “confound the Persons” of the Son and Spirit, which are eternally distinct and complete in themselves, though in nature and operation one. Let me then proceed to comment on several important texts of Scripture, which are adapted to throw light on the main doctrine which is now under review, that our ascended Lord, by ascending, has returned to us invisibly as a Spirit.

1. In His discourse in the synagogue at Capernaum, recorded in the sixth chapter of St. John, after saying, “If any man eat of this Bread, he shall live for ever, and the Bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the world,” thereby intimating both the sacrifice of His Sacred Body upon the cross, and real and individual communication of it by all who shall be saved, He was misunderstood to mean that He intended thereby that what they saw before them, an extended and material form, was to be eaten carnally with the teeth. On this He said, “Doth this offend you? *what, and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up,* where He was before? It is the Spirit that is the Life-giver; the flesh profiteth nothing;” as if He

<sup>1</sup> e. g. Tertullian passim, Cyprian de Van. Idol. fin. (p. 538. ed. Ven.) Iren. Hær. v. 1. Just. Apol. 2. Vid. Grotius on Mark ii. 8. and Præf. Bened. in Hilar. § 57—67.

said, "You being flesh, understand Me to speak of mere flesh, material, mortal flesh; whereas when I speak of My flesh, though I do speak of My body and blood, yet it is not of any thing carnal and earthly, it is not of what you see with your eyes, but of this My body and blood, when, having passed through its state of humiliation, and having been perfected upon the cross, it shall ascend to heaven in a new way, the same and not the same, by the power of the Spirit. Then it shall no longer be a substance that can be seen and handled; it shall be a spiritual body; it shall be Spirit, and this is that which giveth life. "It is the Spirit that quickeneth;" this is what I spoke of when I said that whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, shall have eternal life; I spoke of the Spirit, of My glorified body. It is the Spirit that is the Life-giver; when I come to you again in the power of the Spirit, when I come in My spiritual body, then I shall impart eternal life to all who eat of Me." Observe especially, our Lord connects this spiritual coming with His resurrection and ascension. "What and if ye see the Son of man ascend up, where He was before?" He had been, He was ever in heaven; but His flesh which He had assumed for our sakes, had not yet been there. When it had overcome death, when it touched the throne of God, it was no longer what it had been. Death had no more dominion over Him. "He liveth unto God."

2. Again: consider St. Paul's words, "There

is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit. . . . The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly<sup>1</sup>." And recollect, this is said in answer to the question, "With what body do the dead come?" An objection might be made, then as now, that since the component particles of our body are ever changing during life, since on death they are dissipated to the four winds, the *same* body cannot be raised; what is *meant* then by its being called the *same* body? St. Paul answers that it will be the same body in the sense as a blade of wheat is the same with the seed; being contained within it, and at length developed. So also there is a natural body, and a spiritual body; and the natural body comes first, as the seed does. The spiritual body, how or what we know not, is formed within it, the same as it, yet different in its accidents. Corruption, dissolution, mortality, are but the accidents of the Christian's body, and are separated from it for ever on its rising again. What we see is not the real body, it is but the outward shell; the real body of the regenerate is not material, but spiritual, of which the seed is now deposited within us.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 44—48.

The Apostle then goes on to say how this takes place, viz., by a new birth from Christ. The first man Adam had at first life given him, but he lost it and became earthy; all who are born from him are earthy like him. Such is the generation of those who are born after the flesh. But the second man is not merely living, but life-giving; He is a "quickenning or life-giving Spirit;" the very words (be it observed) which our Saviour had used in His discourse at Capernaum. He is life-giving; and what He is, such are His followers; "as is the heavenly, such are they that are heavenly." As Adam diffused death, so the lifegiving Spirit is the seed and principle of spiritual bodies, to all who are His. "Flesh and blood," says the Apostle, "cannot inherit the kingdom of God;" here, too, is a parallel to our Lord's words, "The flesh profiteth nothing." And further, as our Lord referred to His ascension and exaltation, so here again the lifegiving Spirit is said to be "the Lord *from heaven*." Thus this passage, equally with the foregoing, speaks of our ascended Lord as a Spirit present in His people, and that apparently *because* He has ascended.

3. Another passage of the same description, though the Ascension is not mentioned, is St. Paul's declaration to the Corinthians that "he that is joined to the Lord is one Spirit<sup>1</sup>." Taking these

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. vi. 17.

words in their context, they have a remarkable force in showing the extent of our Lord's condescension towards us under the Gospel. But I quote them here in order to point out that the gift of the Spirit is none other than the entrance into us of the ascended and invisible Saviour. To be joined as one Spirit to Christ and to be a Temple of the Holy Ghost are spoken of as the same gift. It is to be observed that St. Paul, who here speaks of Christ as a Spirit, elsewhere speaks of Him as still possessed of a bodily substance, and communicating Himself to us as such. "We are members of His Body, *from His flesh and from His bones*<sup>1</sup>."

Another remarkable text of the same kind occurs where St. Paul, after describing the "glorious ministration of the Spirit," which is "righteousness" or justification, proceeds: "Now the Lord is that Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty; but we all with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord<sup>2</sup>." I am not here concerned to explain the course of the Apostle's teaching in this chapter; but it would appear on the face of it that the righteousness of the Gospel, which is also "liberty" and "glory," is "ministered" to us by One who is first called "the Spirit," and then "the Lord" Christ. The manner too in which are interchanged

<sup>1</sup> Eph. v. 30.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 17, 18.

the words, "the Spirit," "the Lord," and "the Spirit of the Lord," is very observable.

4. That our justification is connected in some unknown way with Christ's ascension and going out of sight, is also implied in His own words concerning the Holy Ghost in His last discourse with His disciples. "When He is come, He will reprove," or convince, "the world of sin, and of *righteousness*, and of judgment: of sin, because they believe not on Me; of *righteousness*, because I go to My Father, and ye see Me no more<sup>1</sup>." Surely it is impossible to doubt that the "righteousness" so solemnly and emphatically announced in this discourse concerning His coming kingdom, is that "righteousness of God," concerning which St. Paul speaks, and in which he glories. Now I do not say the passage quoted shows *in what* it consists; but thus much it seems to show, that our Lord's ascension out of sight is connected with the gift. Men had refused to believe, therefore there was a charge of sin against them; Christ had disappeared from the world and gone to God, therefore there was the news of righteousness. The words "because I go to My Father and ye see Me no more," seem, I say, in accordance with the other texts quoted, to connect our justification with some mysterious necessity on the part of the Justifier, of removing from us His corporal presence and coming to us invisibly.

<sup>1</sup> John xvi. 8—10.

And here perhaps we may see somewhat of the meaning and depth of the doctrine of justification by *faith*. If justification, or the imparting of righteousness, be a work of the Holy Ghost, a spiritual gift or presence in the heart, it is plain that faith, and faith alone, can discern it and prepare the mind for it, as the Spirit alone can give it. Faith is the correlative, the natural instrument of the things of the Spirit<sup>1</sup>. While Christ was present in the flesh, He might be seen by the eye; but His more perfect and powerful presence, which we now enjoy, being invisible, can be discerned and used by faith only. Thus faith is a mysterious means of gaining gifts from God, which cannot otherwise be gained, according to the text, "If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth<sup>2</sup>." It was necessary for our justification, that Christ should become a quickening Spirit and so invisible; and therefore it was as necessary for the same in God's providence that we should believe<sup>3</sup>; as necessary a

<sup>1</sup> Vid. August. Serm. 143.

<sup>2</sup> Mark ix. 23.

<sup>3</sup> "Fit ut anima, quæ firma fide illis adhæret, sic eis uniatur, imo penitus absorbeatur, ut non modo participet, sed saturetur et inebrietur omni virtute eorum. Si enim tactus Christi sanabat, quanto magis hic tenerrimus in Spiritu, imo absorptio Verbi, omnia quæ Verbi sunt, animæ communicat? Hoc igitur modo anima per fidem solam, sine operibus, e Verbo Dei justificatur, sanctificatur, verificatur, pacificatur, liberatur, et omni bono repletur, vereque filia Dei efficitur, sicut Joannes dicit, Dedit eis potestatem filios Dei fieri, iis qui credunt in nomine ejus."—Luther de Lib. Christ. f. 5.



condition, in St. Paul's language, for "the heart to *believe* unto *righteousness*," as any one thing is a necessary condition of another, as (in this world) eating and drinking are necessary for animal life, or the sun for ripening the fruits of the earth, or the air for transmitting sounds. We have no reason for supposing that the supernatural providences of God are not ordered upon a system of antecedents or second causes as precise and minute as is the natural system. Faith may be as a key unlocking for us the treasures of divine mercy, and the only key. I say there is no antecedent improbability in the idea; and we see from the nature of the case, that Christ could not enter into the hearts of the ten thousands of the true Israel, till He came differently from His coming in the flesh,—till He came in the Spirit. And as the Spirit is the only Justifier, so faith is the only recipient of justification. The eye sees what is material; the mind alone can embrace what is spiritual.

5. And these considerations will serve to throw some light on a mysterious text in the end of St. John's Gospel, where our Lord says to St. Mary Magdalen—"Touch Me not, for I am not yet ascended to My Father<sup>1</sup>." Here the question arises, *Why* might not our Lord be touched *before* His ascension, and how *could* He be touched *after* it? But Christ speaks, it would seem, thus,—if

<sup>1</sup> John xx. 17.

we might venture to paraphrase His sacred words,—  
“ Hitherto you have only known Me after the flesh. I have lived among you as a man. You have been permitted to approach Me sensibly, to kiss and embrace My feet, to pour ointment upon My head. But all this is at an end now that I have died and risen again in the power of the Spirit. A glorified state of existence is begun in Me, and will soon be perfected. At present, though I bid you at one moment handle Me as possessed of flesh and bones, I vanish like a Spirit at another; though I let one follower embrace My feet, and say, ‘Fear not,’ I repel another with the words, ‘Touch Me not.’ Touch Me not, for I am fast passing for your great benefit from earth to heaven, from flesh and blood into glory, from a natural body to a spiritual body. When I am ascended, then the change will be completed. To pass hence to the Father in My bodily presence, is to descend from the Father to you in Spirit. When I am so changed, when I am so present to you, more really present though invisibly, then you may touch Me,—touch Me more really though invisibly, by faith, in reverence, through such outward approaches as I shall assign. Now you but see Me from time to time; when you see most of Me I am at best but ‘going in and out among you.’ Thou hast seen Me, Mary, but could not hold Me; thou hast approached Me, but only to embrace My feet, or to be touched by My hand; and thou sayest, ‘O that I knew where I might find

Him, that I might come even to His seat! O that I might hold Him and not let Him go! Henceforth this shall be; when I am ascended, thou shalt see nothing, thou shalt have every thing. Thou shalt 'sit down under My shadow with great delight, and My fruit shall be sweet to thy taste.' Thou shalt have Me whole and entire. I will be near thee, I will be in thee; I will come into thy heart a whole Saviour, a whole Christ, in all My fulness as God and man, in the awful virtue of that Body and Blood, which has been taken into the Divine Essence of the Word, and is indivisible from it, and has atoned for the sins of the world,—not by external contact, not by partial possession, not by momentary approaches, not by a barren manifestation, but inward in presence, and intimate in fruition, a principle of life and a seed of immortality, that thou mayest 'bring forth fruit unto God.'"

6. And here I am led to suggest the sense of another text, which has no great obscurity on the face of it, yet seems to mean more than cursory readers are apt to consider. I mean St. Paul's words to the Colossians,—“Your life is hid with Christ in God<sup>1</sup>.”

Now, when we come to consider these words, are they not harsh and strange, if they mean merely what the popular way of viewing them in our day considers? If life means, what men at present

<sup>1</sup> Col. iii. 3.

would have it mean, the life of religion and devotion, spiritual mindedness, (as it is sometimes called,) is it not a very violent phrase to say, "it is hid in God?" Is it not irreverent, taken literally? Can it be made reverent without explaining away its wording? If however the foregoing remarks be admitted as true, we are able to take this and similar statements of Scripture literally. For it would seem that, in truth, the principle of our spiritual existence is divine, is an ineffable presence of God. Christ, who promised to make all His disciples one in God with Him, who promised that we should be in God and God in us, has made us so,—has in some mysterious way accomplished for us this great work, this stupendous privilege. It would seem, moreover, as I have said, that He has done so by ascending to the Father; that His ascent bodily, is His descent spiritually; that His taking our nature up to God, is the descent of God into us; that He has truly, though in an unknown sense, taken us to God, or brought down God to us, as we view it. Thus when St. Paul says that our life is hid with Him in God, we may suppose him to intimate, that our principle of existence is no longer a mortal, earthly principle, such as Adam's after his fall, but that we are baptized and hidden anew in God's glory, in that Shekinah of light and purity which we lost when Adam fell, that we are new-created, enriched, transformed, spiritualized, glorified in the Divine nature, that through the partici-

pation of Christ, we receive, as through a channel, the true presence of God within and without us, imbuing us with sanctity and immortality. *This* is our justification, our ascent through Christ to God, or God's descent through Christ to us; we may call it either of the two; we ascend into Him, He descends into us; we are in Him, He in us; Christ being the One Mediator, the way, the truth, and the life, joining earth with heaven. And this is our true Righteousness,—not the mere name of righteousness, not only forgiveness or favour as an act of God's mind, not only sanctification within, (great indeed as these blessings would be, yet it is somewhat more,)—it implies the one, it involves the other, it is the indwelling of our glorified Lord. This is the one great gift of God purchased by the Atonement, which is light instead of darkness and the shadow of death, power instead of weakness, bondage and suffering, spirit instead of the flesh, which is the token of our acceptance with God, the propitiation of our sins in His sight, and the seed and element of renovation.

7. I will conclude with directing attention to the vision of our Lord to St. John in the book of Revelations, which seems to me to be an intimation of the doctrine which I have been explaining. We know how our Lord appeared “in the days of His flesh;” in hunger and thirst, in weariness, in sorrow, in pain, in mortality. Such He is described in the Gospels, while His disciples saw Him; what His

Presence is now, when they see Him not, we learn from St. John's vision. First He is said to be "in the *midst of the Seven Candlesticks,*" or Churches; an expression which at once marks that He is here and that His presence is spiritual. Then He is described, as follows:—"His head and His hair were white as wool, as white as snow, and His eyes were as a flame of fire, and His feet were like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace, and His voice as the sound of many waters. And He had in His right hand seven stars, and out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword, and His countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength." What words could be devised to express more forcibly the power and spirituality of His presence! It is the same description, only far more fearful, which is given of Him at His transfiguration. Then He anticipated that spiritual state which was to be after "His decease, which He should accomplish at Jerusalem." And on that occasion the Apostles "fell on their face and were sore afraid;" but now, St. John himself, the beloved disciple, who had undergone the former vision, and since seen Him risen from the grave, nevertheless, at the sight "fell at His feet as dead." Then Moses and Elias talked of the death "which He should accomplish;" but now He said, "I am He which liveth and was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore, and have the keys of hell and of death."

Here then is certainly a representation of our

Lord, the risen and glorified Saviour, living and ruling in His Church. Now it is very remarkable that, though He thus appears as Christ in the vision, yet in what follows, He is spoken of as the Spirit, not as Christ, though He still speaks of Himself as Christ; as if to intimate that all the gifts His blood has purchased are ministered by the Spirit, and that what Christ was to His Apostles when on earth, such, and far more than such, is the Holy Ghost to us now. Here we seem to see something of the meaning of the words,—“The Holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified;” for the gift of the Spirit was really this and nothing else, Jesus Himself glorified, ascended and invisibly returned.

To conclude:—What has been said will serve to throw light upon a peculiarity of the Apostles' preaching, which has sometimes drawn attention. They insist on our Lord's Resurrection, as if it were the main doctrine of the Gospel; but why so, and not His Divinity or the Atonement? Many good reasons may be given for this; as for instance, that the Resurrection was the great miracle and evidence of the divinity of the religion; or that it is the pledge of our resurrection; on the other hand that His Divinity and Atonement was too sacred a doctrine to preach to the world. But if, as we have seen, the Resurrection be the means by which the Atonement is applied to each of us, if it be our justification, if in it are conveyed all the gifts of grace and

glory which Christ has purcha ed for us, if it be the commencement of His giving Himself to us for a spiritual sustenance, of His feeding us with that Bread which has already been perfected on the Cross, and is now a medicine of immortality, it is that very doctrine which is most immediate to us, in which Christ most closely approaches us, from which we gain life, and out of which issue our hopes and our duties. Christ is God from everlasting; He became Man under Cæsar Augustus; He was an Atonement for the world on the Cross; but He became a Saviour on His resurrection. He was then "exalted to be a Prince and a Saviour;" to come to us in the power of the Spirit, as God, as Man, and as Atoning Sacrifice.



## LECTURE X.

---

### JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH ONLY.

---

2 COR. i. 24.

“By faith ye stand.”

JUSTIFICATION consisting in the presence of Christ within us, and that presence manifesting itself in newness of heart and conduct, the question arises, where, under such a view of the doctrine, Faith is found, what is its position, what are its bearings upon the points already settled, and how are its claims satisfied as acknowledged in our Formularies. This is the subject which shall now engage our attention.

The eleventh Article says that “we are justified *by Faith only*,” agreeably with which we are told in the Homily on the Passion, that Faith is the *one mean and instrument* of justification. “As it profiteth a man nothing,” says its most perspicuous writer, “to have salve, unless it be well applied to the part affected, so the death of Christ shall

stand us in no force, unless we apply it to ourselves in such sort as God hath appointed. Almighty God commonly worketh by means, and in this thing He has also ordained a certain mean whereby we may take fruit and profit to our souls' health. What mean is that? forsooth it is faith. Not an unconstant or wavering faith, but a sure, stedfast, grounded, and unfeigned faith. 'God sent His Son into the world,' says St. John. To what end? 'That whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have life everlasting.' Mark these words, 'that whosoever believeth in Him.' Here is the mean, whereby we must apply the fruits of Christ's death unto our deadly wound. Here is the mean, whereby we must obtain eternal life, namely faith." Then after quoting other texts of Scripture, he continues, "By this, then, we may well perceive, that the only mean and instrument of salvation required on our parts is faith, that is to say, a sure trust and confidence in the mercies of God." He adds, towards the end of the Homily, "Let us, then, use that mean which God hath appointed in His word, to wit, the mean of faith, which is the only instrument of salvation now left unto us. Let us stedfastly behold Christ crucified with the eyes of our heart;" and so he concludes in a very serious and impressive strain.

In the judgment, then, of this Homily, faith is certainly in some distinct and important sense the

sole mean and instrument of justification. The question is, in what sense.

Now, on the one hand, I observe, what all will allow, that the faith spoken of is not any faith, but a lively faith. This indeed is implied in the passage just quoted, which speaks as concerning "not an unconstant or wavering faith, but a sure, stedfast, grounded, and unfeigned faith." Faith which does not trust, as the devil's faith,—or faith which does not love, though it could "remove mountains,"—or faith which cannot work, as his to whom "to will is present," but "not to perform that which is good,"—all such faith does not justify. It is, then, not mere faith, but faith under certain circumstances or conditions, faith when it trusts, loves, and lives, a fruitful faith, which is the sole mean and instrument of justification.

On the other hand, I do not understand faith to be a general term, meaning nothing more or less than trust, love, life, and all other excellences of the new mind or creature together. When the Homily calls it "the *sole* mean," it speaks by way of contrast to *other* graces. The writer would not call it the sole *mean*, if it were the sole *grace*. By faith is not meant religiousness generally, nor obedience, nor spiritual life, nor love, nor hope, nor trust; whatever is meant, sometimes is meant distinct from all these. I do not deny that faith often stands for these in Scripture, in the Homilies them-

selves, and elsewhere; nay, I will not deny that the Homily before us, as being a popular discourse, does speak of faith, as if it were something more than faith, viz. trust, confidence, hope, and perseverance, because it is really inseparable from them, and one with them; still, when it is called the sole instrument of justification, it must stand in contrast to them, and be contemplated in itself, as being one certain property, habit, or act of the mind. This is expressed by another Homily, when it says that faith “doth not shut out repentance, hope, love, dread, and the fear of God, to be joined with faith in every man, that is justified; but it *shutteth them out from the office* of justifying<sup>1</sup>.”

Here I draw an important conclusion; that the instrumental power of Faith cannot interfere with the instrumental power of Baptism; because Faith is the *sole* justifier, not in contrast to all means and agencies whatever, (for it is not surely in contrast to our Lord’s merits, or God’s mercy,) but to all other *graces*. When, then, Faith is called the sole instrument, this means the sole *internal* instrument, not the sole instrument of any kind.

There is nothing inconsistent, then, in Faith being the sole instrument of justification, and yet Baptism also the sole instrument, and that at the same time, because in distinct senses; an inward instrument in no way interfering with an outward

<sup>1</sup> Sermon of Salvation, Part 1.

instrument. Baptism might be the hand of the giver, and Faith the hand of the receiver. However, it is not so, as is plain, for this reason,—that Baptism occurs but once, whereas justification is a state, and faith “abides.” Justification, then, needs a perpetual instrument, such as faith can, and Baptism cannot be. Each, then, has its own office in the work; Baptism at the time, and faith ever after. Faith secures to the soul continually those gifts which Baptism primarily conveys. The Sacraments are the immediate, faith is the secondary, subordinate, or representative instrument of justification. Or we may say, varying our mode of expression, that the Sacraments are its instrumental, and Faith its sustaining cause.

Faith, then, being the appointed representative of Baptism, derives its authority and virtue from that which it represents. It is justifying because of Baptism; it is the faith of the baptized, of the regenerate, that is, of the justified. Faith does not precede justification; but justification precedes faith, and makes it justifying. And here lies the cardinal mistake of the views on the subject now in esteem. They make faith the sole instrument, not after Baptism but before; whereas Baptism is the primary instrument, and creates faith to be what it is and otherwise is not, giving it power and rank, and constituting it as its own successor.

That this is the doctrine of our Church appears from the Homilies. These are addressed, not to

heathens but to Christians, they are practical and popular exhortations to Christians. They inform a baptized congregation, or, as they speak, "dear Christians," "good Christian people," how they may be saved, not how God will deal with the heathen. They are not missionary discourses, directing pagans how to proceed in order to be justified, but are composed for the edification of those who through God's mercy are already "dearly beloved in Christ." And, as regards the point before us, they lay down "what the lively and true faith *of a Christian man* is." Clear, however, as this is, at first sight, I will make some extracts from them, to impress it upon the mind.

Take for instance the very passage I quoted in the opening, in which faith is called the sole instrument of justification; it will be found the writer is teaching a Christian congregation what they must do. He does not, cannot say with St. Peter, "Be baptized every one of you for the remission of sins;" that sacred remedy has been long ago applied and may not be repeated. What is left, then, after sinning but, as it were, to renew their Baptism, at least its virtue, by faith, as "the only instrument of salvation *now left unto us.*" And this is why stress is laid upon "a stedfast, not a wavering faith;" he does not simply say lively, but stedfast, because faith is to be the abiding, sustaining means of justification, or, in the words of the text, "By faith we stand;" as Moses' uplifted hands continued the

victory of his people over Amalek. He says so in express words, "Here we must take heed that we do not halt with God through an unconstant and wavering faith, but that it be strong and stedfast *to our lives' end*. . . . Peter coming to Christ upon the water, because he *fainted* in faith, was in danger of drowning. So we, if we begin to waver or doubt, it is to be feared lest we should sink, as Peter did, not into the water, but into the bottomless pit of hell fire." All this, I say, shows that when the Homily speaks of faith as an instrument, it means a sustaining instrument; what the primary instrument is, being quite a separate question. Those who now speak of faith as the sole means of justification, too commonly consider the mass of Christians unregenerate, and call them out of their supposed heathen state *through* faith, as the sole *initiation* into Christ's kingdom. How different is the tone of this exhortation! attend to the very words which precede the strongest of the passages cited above. "Therefore, dearly beloved, if we chance *at any time*, through frailty of the flesh, *to fall* into sin . . . and if we feel the heavy burden thereof to press our souls . . . let us *then* use that mean which God hath appointed in His word, to wit, the mean of faith, which is the *only* instrument of salvation now left unto us."

But, it may be said, there is nothing about Baptism here; let us then turn to the Homily on Salvation or Justification, to which the Article

refers, where we shall find that doctrine clearly stated, though it does not enter into the scope of the Homily already cited. "Infants, being baptized and dying in the infancy, are by this Sacrifice washed from their sins, brought to God's favour, and made His children, and inheritors of His kingdom of heaven. And they, which in act or deed do sin *after their Baptism*, when they turn again to God unfeignedly," that is, come to God *in faith*, as the Homily directly goes on to say, "they are *likewise* washed by this Sacrifice from their sins." Here is distinct mention of faith justifying *after* Baptism, but no mention of its justifying *before* Baptism; on the contrary, Baptism is expressly said to effect the first justification. The writer proceeds: "*This* is that justification or righteousness which St. Paul speaks of, when he saith, "No man is justified by the works of the Law, but freely by faith in Jesus Christ." So it seems that St. Paul too, when he speaks of justification through faith, speaks of faith as subordinate to Baptism, not as the immediate initiation into a justified state.

And as Holy Baptism, in the judgment of the Homilies, is the immediate initiation into God's grace, so is Holy Communion, not the initiatory, but still an immediate and proper instrument of receiving it also; though this is not the place for proving it<sup>1</sup>. Here the question before us simply

<sup>1</sup> "Thus much we must be sure to hold, that in the Supper of the Lord there is no vain ceremony, no bare sign, no untrue



is, in what sense *faith* is the “sole instrument ;” and I have answered it by showing from the Homilies, that it is sole and only, not as opposed to external means, but to the other graces, and as preceded and made an instrument by the secret virtue of Baptism. As to the Holy Eucharist, in whatever sense it justifies, faith, as taking the place of Baptism, can as little interfere with its office as Baptism itself interferes. One proof, however, may be mentioned by the way, that our Church assigns to faith the same subordinate function as regards the second Sacrament, as it bears towards the first <sup>1</sup>. I mean the Rubric in the Service for the Communion of

figure of a thing absent. . . . Thus much more the faithful see, hear, and know ; the favourable mercies of God sealed, the satisfaction by Christ towards us confirmed, and the remission of sin established. . . . Take, then, this lesson, O thou that art desirous of this Table, of Emissenus, a godly Father, that when thou goest up to the reverend Communion, to be satisfied with spiritual meat, then look up with faith upon the Holy Body and Blood of thy God, then marvel with reverence, then touch it with thy mind, then receive it with the hand of thy heart, and then take it fully with thy inward man.”—Sermon concerning the Sacrament, *Part I.*

<sup>1</sup> “That faith is a necessary instrument *in* all these Holy Ceremonies, we may thus assure ourselves, for that, as St. Paul saith, ‘without faith it is impossible to please God.’ When a great number of the Israelites were overthrown in the wilderness, Moses, Aaron, and Phineas, did eat manna, and pleased God, &c.—*Ibid.* And so the 28th Article. “The *mean* whereby the Body of Christ is received and eaten in the Supper, is *Faith.*”

the Sick ; which instructs us that faith, so far from superseding, is to represent the Eucharist, only when, from whatever cause, it cannot be obtained. It continues on and pleads in God's sight the sick person's former reception of it.

Faith, then, considered as an instrument, is always secondary to the Sacraments. The most extreme case, in which it seems to supersede them, is found, not in our own, but in the Ancient Church ; in which the faith of persons, dying in the state of Catechumens, was held to avail to their reception on death into that kingdom, of which Baptism is the ordinary gate. How different is the spirit of such a guarded exception, from the doctrine, now in esteem, that faith *ipso facto* justifies, the Sacraments merely confirming and sealing what is complete without them !

Let us proceed to Scripture, which will be found distinctly to declare the same general doctrine. And here I cannot desire a more cogent argument than is furnished by the account of St. Paul's conversion, who surely, if any one, would have received justification, not in Baptism, but before it ; I mean at the time of Christ's appearance to him, or during his three days' fasting and prayer. Faith surely would have been immediately justifying in his case, if ever ; yet, so far from it, Ananias, after pointedly declaring that he had seen "*that Just One,*" who is also "the justifier of him that believeth," yet bade him be baptized "and wash away his sins." The

Apostle himself teaches the same doctrine to the Galatians, when, after discoursing at large of faith as justifying, and that as a very observable and important truth, ends thus: "Ye are all the children of God *by faith* in Christ Jesus; *for* as many of you as have been *baptized* into Christ, have put on Christ." That is, ye *are* God's children by faith, *because* ye *have* put on Christ in Baptism. Putting on Christ by Baptism has brought you into the condition of being God's children by faith. Or in other words, Faith justifies, *because* Baptism has justified. Again, He says to the Hebrews, "Let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of *faith*, having been sprinkled in heart from an evil conscience, and *having been washed in body with pure water*." Why is this cleansing of the conscience, and baptismal washing mentioned, except as a *warrant* in order to drawing near in assurance of faith? To the same purport is St. Peter's teaching, that God "hath *begotten* us again unto a lively hope," and "to an inheritance incorruptible," and that they who are thus chosen "are *kept* by the power of God *through faith* <sup>1</sup>." Lively faith comes after regeneration, not before it.

In these passages faith is made a permanent or sustaining means, and not the beginning of justification; with which agree others, like the text, which speak of our faith as securing our *state* of

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 26, 27. Heb. x. 22. 1 Pet. i. 5. Vide also Acts x. 47.

favour. "By faith ye stand." Again, "because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou *standest by faith.*" Again: "I declare unto you the Gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have *received, and wherein ye stand.*" And again: "By whom also we have access *by faith* into this grace, *wherein we stand.*" Once more; "Yet a little while and He that cometh will arrive, and will not tarry; now the just shall *live by faith*, but if he *draw back*, My soul shall have no pleasure in him."

These passages also prove that only faith has this sustaining power, from the circumstance that while it is so repeatedly ascribed to faith, and that absolutely and without contrast, it is not ascribed to other graces. If by "standing" be meant, as I conceive, being in a justified state, faith surely, and not any other grace, is that which operates in keeping us in it. Why it does so, is altogether a distinct question, and one perhaps which we cannot adequately determine. But whatever be God's inscrutable reasons for thus connecting faith immediately with His evangelical gifts, so has He done.

Moreover, it will be observed that the greatest and most sacred gifts are again and again ascribed to faith, and not to other graces; as if there certainly were some special connexion between those gifts and faith, though we may be unable to define what it is. For instance, the forgiveness of sins:—"Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through *faith*

in His blood, to declare His righteousness for the *remission of sins* that are past." The presence of the Spirit:—"that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through *faith*." Sanctification:—"purifying their hearts by *faith*." Perseverance:—"who are kept by the power of God through *faith*." The resurrection of the body:—"He that *believeth* in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live." Eternal life:—"that whosoever *believeth* in Him, should not perish, but have everlasting life." The Body and Blood of Christ:—"I am the Bread of Life; he that cometh to Me shall never hunger, and he that *believeth* on Me shall never thirst" Or, as all God's ineffable gifts may be compendiously stated in one word, justification:—"that He might be just, and the justifier of him that believeth in Jesus<sup>1</sup>."

And here a strong confirmatory argument is afforded by Christ's conduct, when on earth, to those who came to Him to be healed. What faith was in the "days of the Son of Man" for temporal blessings, such surely is it now under the ministration of the Spirit for heavenly. So strict, then, it would seem, was the necessity of faith as a mean of receiving His bounty, that when the sick person did not or could not show it, it was exacted of the parties who brought him. Our Lord said to the woman with an issue of blood, who touched His

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iii. 25, 26. Gal. iii. 14. Acts xv. 9. 1 Pet. i. 5. John xi. 25; iii. 16; vi. 35.

garment, "Thy *faith* hath made thee whole;" to the blind man, "*Believe* ye that I am able to do this?" and "according to thy faith, be it unto thee;" to the woman of Canaan, "O woman, great is thy *faith*; be it unto thee even as thou wilt." Seeing the *faith* of those who let down the paralytic through the roof, He said to the sick man, "Son, thy sins be forgiven thee;" in His own country, "He did not many mighty things, *because of their unbelief*," nay, "He *could* do there no mighty works, save that He laid His hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them." "In like manner, St. Paul at Lystra, "stedfastly beholding" the cripple, "and perceiving he had *faith* to be healed, said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet." And St. Peter also fastening his eyes upon "the lame man at the Beautiful gate," and saying, "Look on us," took him by the right hand, and lifted him up;" and in consequence, he says presently, that Christ's "Name, through *faith* in His Name, hath made this man strong." Moreover, our Lord lays down on several occasions this broad doctrine; "If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth<sup>1</sup>;" "If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say to this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you." "All things whatsoever ye shall ask

<sup>1</sup> Matt. ix. 22, 28, 29; xiii. 58; xv. 28; xvii. 20; xxi. 22. Mark ii. 5; vi. 5; ix. 23. Acts iii. 4, 7, 11; xiv. 9, 10.

in prayer, believing, ye shall receive." Our Lord's words seem to have become proverbial, for St. Paul speaks of faith "removing mountains<sup>1</sup>." Surely, it is not without the purpose of a permanent lesson in the Church, that the inspired word has thus uniformly recorded this connexion between faith and the gifts of the Gospel; surely, what is true of its visible miracles, is true also of its invisible, which still remain to us. It is not love nor humility, which has the special office of co-operating with God's outward signs, with the divine "breathing" and "touching," with the divinely tempered "clay," or the divine word, but faith. And let it be observed that this assignment of a particular office, or a special blessing to a certain grace, is quite according to the analogy of Scripture; so that even could we see no reasons at all for it, it need not surprise us, that the reception of God's grace should be a prerogative of Faith, Thus, "the pure in heart" "shall see God;" and "the meek" "shall inherit the earth."

On all accounts then, from the instances, statements, and analogy of Scripture, we may safely conclude that there is a certain extraordinary and singular sympathy between faith and the grant of Gospel privileges, such as to constitute it, in a true sense, an instrument of it, that is, of justification, which includes them all;—in a true sense to be determined by that same Scripture, and not by antecedent argu-

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiii. 2.

ments, as if the definition of faith implied it, or the condition of man required it, (man being unequal to works, or faith being “apprehensive,” or trusting to our own merits being perilous and probable, or comfort being thus secured to us,)—nor clashing with other truths, such as the instrumentality of the Sacraments,—nor superseding conditions, such as repentance and obedience,—nor inconsistent with the priority of love to faith, at least implicitly, both in order of nature and of time.

Reserving to Baptism then our new birth, and to the Eucharist the ultimate springs of the new life, and to Love what may be called its plastic power, and to Obedience its being the atmosphere in which faith breathes, still the divinely appointed or (in other words) the mysterious virtue of Faith remains. It alone coalesces with the Sacraments, brings them into effect, dissolves (as it were) their outward case, and through them unites the soul to God<sup>1</sup>. It alone, while developing, also sanctifies in God’s sight all other graces, like salt or incense on sacrifices; which neither buys the victim, nor supersedes it, but recommends it to God’s acceptance. Such is justifying faith, justifying not the ungodly but the just, whom God has justified when ungodly;

<sup>1</sup> Δείξας ἀνόνητα τῆς νομικῆς ἱερουργίας τὰ εἶδη, ὑπισχνεῖται τῶν ἁμαρτημάτων τὴν ἄφεσιν ἣν διὰ τοῦ παναγίου βαπτίσματος ἐδωρήσατο· Ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ ἐξαλείφων τὰς ἁμαρτίας, κ. τ. λ. (Is. xlii. 25.) οὐ γὰρ δὴ δι’ ἔργων ἀξιεπαίνων, ἀλλὰ διὰ μόνης πίστεως τῶν μυστικῶν τετυχήκαμεν ἀγαθῶν. Theod. Adv. Gent. viii. p. 892.



justifying him under God, and under God's means; justifying the just, as being the faith of the justified, who through Baptism first became so when as yet they were unjust. And hence the Gospel is called "the law of faith," and discipleship "the obedience of faith;" for though faith is the principle of all religion, yet under the Gospel it has a special office, and that with an evident fitness *so far* as it is assigned it, though we dare not antecedently decide *how far* it is so. And if it be objected that faith, thus restricted in its office, is after all only a higher kind of condition, or what is called *sine qua non* in justification, instead of a positive instrument; (in that the Sacraments convey the gift, and faith has but the negative office of not impeding its bestowal, and this any other grace has equally, for if love, or purity, or repentance were absent, the Sacraments would not savingly operate, and it is unmeaning to make faith more than a condition and less than an immediate and proper instrument,) I would reply that this is but to indulge in the same antecedent sort of reasoning as before. What do we know of the instruments, means, qualifications, and conditions of salvation? What do we know of the real efficacy of any thing we do? What of the mode in which prayer operates? What of the means through which actions change the character? What of the sense in which Adam's sin is our sin? Let us not think God's system narrow, because we are ignorant. Let us believe, if His word so intimates, that faith

has an office for which we have not a word, as not having a definite idea; that without being that on which solely and immediately God grants His heavenly gifts, yet there is some connexion between it and them, more than ordinary;—as, for instance, gaining blessings for the Church is associated by our Lord and His Apostles with perseverance in prayer.

However, when faith is said to justify after Baptism, not before, an obvious question rises which shall now be answered. It will be asked what is to be understood by certain passages of Scripture which seem to speak of faith as justifying before Baptism; as when it is said—“Being justified by faith we have peace with God,” Baptism not being named; or, where both are mentioned, “He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;” or, in the way of precept, “Believe in the Lord Jesus, and thou shalt be saved.”

Now if this objection is worth any thing, its force must lie in this; that, not in doctrinal passages, as the first of these, (for in such truth is stated in an abstract way,) but in precepts and directions, as in the last, faith is pointed out as the instrument of justification apart from Baptism. The first then may be at once dismissed from the discussion; the last may fairly be urged, but nothing will follow from it. The words “Believe, and thou shalt be saved,” as little negative the use of a divine instrument, such as Baptism, as intervening between

faith and its reward, as the Centurion's faith, such as was not in Israel, dispensed with our Lord's speaking the word that His servant might be healed. The jailor to whom they were spoken *was* baptized forthwith; if St. Paul's silence about Baptism be an argument against its instrumental power, it would be an argument also against its administration; that is, the objection proves too much. Texts then, in which Baptism is not mentioned, prove nothing, while there are texts in which it is mentioned; else the omission of faith in St. Peter's exhortation to "repent and be baptized," is a valid argument against the necessity of faith. And as to the second of the three quoted, in which faith comes *first* and Baptism follows, such passages as little prove that faith and not Baptism is the true instrument of grace, as our Saviour's call to "repent and believe the Gospel" shows that repentance justifies, and not faith. Such texts then as the three instanced, neither prove the one doctrine nor its opposite: they may be taken either way. The state of the case is this: there *are* texts which speak of Baptism as the *beginning* of a state of grace; are there any which so speak of faith? The new birth is an *act*, an initiatory act, forgiveness is an *act*; but justification is a *state*, being in God's favour is a *state*. It is nothing to the purpose then to show that faith is connected in Scripture with justification, or with God's favour. Is it connected with the new birth, with the washing away of sin? this is the question. Now Baptism *is*

an act, an initiatory act and nothing beyond, and therefore a fit attendant on an inward initiatory act, such as regeneration; whereas faith, though an act, is something beyond an act, it is an abiding habit, and therefore more fitly constituted to attend upon an abiding state. And next, I repeat, the act of justifying *is* expressly ascribed to Baptism as an immediate means; is it any where ascribed to faith? Ananias bids St. Paul be baptized and *wash away* his sins; but we are told in the text, “By faith ye *stand*.” Are we any where said to *rise up* by faith, as well as stand? Is faith ever said to wash away sins, as Baptism is? to effect our new birth, as Baptism is? to *begin* that new life, which doubtless it *sustains*, to *gain* what it certainly *holds*? The silence of Scripture on this point is the more remarkable from the circumstance that so many high gifts, sanctification, eternal life, and resurrection of the body, *are* connected with faith; all but the new birth; all but the first step, which is elsewhere said to be through Baptism. What indeed does it say of faith before Baptism, except as a necessary step to Baptism? Its highest praise before Baptism is that it leads to it, as its highest efficacy after is that it comes from it. Nothing is said of it before Baptism, that is not said of repentance, or of restitution, which are also necessary conditions in order to Baptism; but before it, it is without “*availing power*,” without life in the sight of God, as regards our justification. Upon these, not in and through them,

comes Gospel grace, meeting, not co-operating with them, by a distinct process and with an interval. "As many as *received* Him," says the Evangelist, "to them *gave He power* to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name." Their faith was their *coming*; is coming the *instrument* of a beggar's receiving alms, or rather a necessary previous step? is it the same as the hand that takes, or the hand that gives? Those who believe, says St. John, are *thereupon* born of God; he does not say, "as many as had faith in Him, they were born again," but "as many as received Him, they received *power* to be born again." There was an intervening process; that process was reception into His Church or Kingdom. Faith then must not be called the new birth, till Scripture is shown to say so; and this is why we hear so much in Protestant schools and congregations of "*apprehending,*" "*applying,*" "*appropriating,*" "*interesting oneself in*" Christ by faith; words not in Scripture, *instead* of Scripture terms, which cannot be found.

Faith then, as gaining its virtue from Baptism, is one thing before that sacred ordinance, another after. Baptism changes it from a condition into the instrument of justification; it raises it from a mere forerunner into its accredited representative. And here, if any one objects to me, that, in making this distinction, I am committing the fault I charged on those who give two senses to the word *righteous*, I reply that a stronger argument cannot be desired

against that modern distinction, than the contrast of the grounds on which it is made with those of the ancient. I objected to giving two senses to the word *righteous*, as unreasonable; but what is more reasonable, on the contrary, than that faith, which is renewed in knowledge when Christ is revealed as an Object, should also be renewed in power when Christ is imparted as a Spirit? that as it is variously exercised in the Law and the Gospel, so also it should be variously endowed also? Surely it is not at all strange that faith, when a grace, should do more than faith when but a moral virtue; when lively, than when it “willed” without “performing.” Rather it would be strange that faith, before Baptism, like the jailor’s, full of terror and inquiet, or of his household, vague and dull-minded, that feeble, sickly, wayward, fitful, inoperative faith even should be taken as a condition, except that a man “is accepted according to that he hath, not according to that he hath not;” that the principle of faith is capable of great things, though it be nothing till Christ regenerate it; and that when it comes for Baptism, it is on the point of being rid of itself and hid in Him. It comes to the Fount of life to be made alive, as the dry bones in the Prophet’s vision were brought together in preparation for the Breath of God to quicken them; and He who “makes all things new,” and takes into Him, and assimilates unto Him, all that is “in heaven and earth,” as He makes sinners righteous, their persons

“pleasant,” their works “acceptable,” and their alms, instead of a mere “memorial,” a “sweet-smelling sacrifice,” so also by His presence, converts what is a condition of obtaining favour, into the means of holding and enjoying it.

So much on faith as a condition not an instrument, its office varying in importance with its nature; however, there is a point of view in which both its nature and its office are the same always, and its relation towards justification one and the same. With some notice of this I shall conclude.

Unless, indeed, it were substantially the same habit of mind under all circumstances, it would not be called faith; and so far it always has the same office, of which one especial characteristic is this, that it magnifies the grace of God, and is a sort of witness of its freeness and largeness. In consequence it is a *symbol* of the nature and mode of our justification, or of its *history*; and hence is said by Protestant divines to justify only, that our minds may be *affected* with a due sense of their own inability to do any good thing of themselves. This is Melanchthon's view, in which he is followed by parts of our Homilies;—and now to explain it <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Cum dicitur, Fide justificamur, *non aliud* dicitur, quam quod propter Filium Dei accipiamus remissionem peccatorum et reputemur justi . . . . Intelligatur ergo propositio correlative, Fide sumus justi, id est, *per misericordiam* propter Filium Dei sumus justi seu accepti.—Melanchth. Loc. Theol. de voc. Fidei. (f. 199. 2.)

I say, then, that when Melancthon and his school speak of faith only justifying, they do not say with Luther that it is the *primary instrument*, (which is untrue,) nor with our Homilies, that it is an *instrument after* Baptism, (which is true,) but with parts of our first book of Homilies, that it is an *emblem* or *image* of the free grace of our redemption. To say we are justified by faith only, was in that Reformer's mouth a lively mode of speech, (he calls it figurative,) for saying that we are justified neither by faith nor by works, but by God only. I do not deny that such a figure has something refined about it, but it served effectually to exculpate the doctrine which he had received from Luther, from the charge of superseding good works, as showing that really and practically it had nothing to do either with faith or works, but with grace. And since thus explained it was most true, and was a protest against errors, which then were widely spread in the Church, it was adopted by our Reformers, without

In ecclesiis nostris dicitur, Fide sola justificamur, quod sic intelligimus et declaramus, Gratis propter solum Mediatorem, non propter nostram contritionem, seu alia nostra merita, donamur remissione peccatorum et reconciliatione.—Confess. Eccl. Saxon. (ibid. f. 126.)

Sancti patres sæpe dicunt, nos per misericordiam salvari. Quoties igitur fit mentio misericordiæ, secundum est quod fide ibi requiratur, quæ promissionem misericordiæ accipit. Et rursus quoties nos de fide loquimur *intelligi volumus objectum*, scilicet misericordiam promissam.—Apol. Confess. August. de Justif. (ibid. f. 64.)



abandoning the modified *instrumental* sense of it above commented on.

A few illustrations will bring out its meaning. We speak of "the Throne," or "the Crown," when we mean the King. "The rights of the Crown" is a phrase, absurd, if analysed literally, but intelligible as a figure. Such, according to Melancthon, is justification by faith only.

Again: faith is the tenure on which we enjoy the gifts which Christ has merited for us; as one who had served his country might receive from it large possessions for his children on the condition of some yearly acknowledgement, worthless in itself, but under the circumstances, a memorial both of his claims and of their dependence on their country. We might speak of their holding their estates *by* such acknowledgement, without meaning more than that it was the sole symbol, not in any sense the sole condition of enjoying them.

Again: our Lord commits to St. Peter the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and gives him the name of *rock*, or foundation. This does not exclude the other Apostles from holding the keys and being foundations also; indeed they are expressly so called. He is not the head of them, or the channel through whom they are Christ's Apostles. Why, then, is he singled out by our Lord? He is, as Protestants say, a specimen of what all the Apostles are, and a type and symbol of them all. His *name* expresses what all of them, including himself, really

are, foundations. In like manner, on the explanation before us, faith is *said* to justify, not that it really justifies more than the other graces; but it has this peculiarity, that it signifies, in its very nature, that nothing of ours justifies us, or it typifies the freeness of our justification. Faith heralds forth divine grace, and its name is a sort of representation of it, as opposed to works. Hence it may well be honoured above the other graces, and placed nearer Christ than the rest, as if it were distinct from them, and before them, and above them, though it be not. It is suitably said to justify us, because it says itself that it does not,—so to speak, as a sort of reward to it. In so determining, the Reformers are not laying down a practical direction how to proceed *in order* to be justified, what is required of us *for* justification, but a large principle or doctrine ever to be held and cherished, that in ourselves we deserve eternal ruin, and are saved by Christ's mercy, and that not through faith only, but through faith and all graces.

Now about this interpretation of the doctrine I will only say, first, that nothing can be more scriptural than the sense thus elicited from it; next, that it is more adapted for the Schools, than for the taste of a people like the English at the present day; but, lastly, that if our Reformers have chosen thus to express what is in itself true, and to transmit it to us, it is right to maintain it, as Bishop

Bull has incidentally done in his instructive Harmony of St. Paul with St. James.

Let us then now turn to the first book of Homilies; which will be found clearly to teach, not with Luther that faith is solitary at the time it first justifies, but with Melancthon that, whereas it never is solitary, it is but *said* to be the sole justifier, and that with a view to inculcate another doctrine *not* said, viz. that all is of grace.

“This *sentence*, that we be justified by faith only, is not so meant by them,” the Fathers, “that the said justifying faith is alone in man, without true repentance, hope, charity, dread and the fear of God, *at any time or season.*” Again, in a passage which has been already cited, we are told, “Faith *doth not shut out* repentance, love, dread and the fear of God, to be joined with faith in every one that is justified, but it *shutteth* them out from the *office* of justifying.”

What is the office here spoken of? not the office of conveying, but of symbolizing justification. For instance; “As great and godly a virtue as the lively faith is, yet it *putteth us from itself* and remitteth or *appointeth* us unto Christ, for to have *only by Him* remission of our sins or justification. So that our faith in Christ (as it were) *saith unto us* that, “It is not I that take away your sins, but it is Christ only, and to Him only *I send you* for that purpose, forsaking therein all your good virtues, words, thoughts,

and works, and only putting your trust in Christ." It is plain that "faith only" does not apprehend, apply, or appropriate Christ's merits; but it only *preaches* them; and thus surely conveys a "most wholesome doctrine, and very full of comfort."

The doctrine, then, on this interpretation, is not a practical rule, but an abstract principle. Accordingly, it will be observed, the Homilies do not attempt to *explain* its wording literally, but declare it to be a *sentence, saying, or form of speech*, one too, which, when drawn out, assumes quite a new shape, as far as its letter is concerned.

For instance: "*This saying*, that we be justified by faith only, freely, and without works, is spoken *for to take away* clearly all merit of our works, as being unable to deserve our justification at God's hands;" the *drift* is given, not an *interpretation*. The writer proceeds, "and *thereby most plainly to express* the weakness of man and the goodness of God; the great infirmity of ourselves, and the might and power of God; the imperfectness of our own works, and the most abundant grace of our Saviour Christ; and *thereby wholly to ascribe* the merit and deserving of our justification unto Christ only, and His most precious blood-shedding<sup>1</sup>." Can

<sup>1</sup> Sermon of Salvation, part ii.

In like manner, "Justification is the office of God only, and is not a thing which we render unto Him, but which we receive of Him; not which we give to Him, but which we take of Him, by His free mercy, and by the only merits of His most

words be clearer to prove that faith is considered to justify not as an instrument, but as a symbol; it is to *do* nothing, but it is to “say,” to “express,” to “ascribe,” to *glory*, to *warn*, to *bring good tidings*.

In like manner in the third part of the same Homily: “The very true meaning of this *proposition or saying*, We be justified by faith only (according to the meaning of the old ancient authors) is this, We put our faith in Christ, *that we be justified*

dearly beloved Son, our only Redeemer, Saviour, and Justifier, Jesus Christ; so that *the true understanding* of this doctrine, we be justified freely by faith without works, or that we be justified by faith in Christ only, is *not*, that this our own act to believe in Christ, or this our faith in Christ, which is within us, doth justify us,”—let it be observed, we are told what the words do *not* mean,—in what sense it is *not* true that faith justifies, viz., *not* by having any real merit; it would have been natural then to have gone on to say in what sense faith *does* justify. Instead, however, of thus closing with the words, and sifting their meaning, well understanding they are the emblem of a principle, not a literal statement, the writer continues:—“but *the true understanding and meaning thereof is*, that, *although* we have faith, hope, charity, repentance, dread and fear of God within us, and do never so many good works thereunto, yet we must *renounce the merit* of all our said virtues, of faith, hope, charity, and all our other virtues and good deeds which we either have done, shall do, or can do, as things that be far too weak and insufficient, and imperfect, to deserve remission of our sins, and our justification; and therefore we must trust only in God’s mercy, and that Sacrifice which our High Priest and Saviour, Christ Jesus, the Son of God once offered for us upon the Cross.” It must be recollected that Melancthon, vide note p. 211, calls justification by faith, *Paulina figura*.

by *Him only*<sup>1</sup>." Justification by faith only is here said to be a *saying*; consider how astonished and pained we should be, were the doctrine of the Atonement or of Christ's divinity said to be a proposition, saying, or form of speaking.

This last mentioned title is actually given it in another passage:—" *This form of speaking* use we, in the humbling of ourselves to God, and to give all the glory to our Saviour Christ, who is best worthy to have it."

Enough has now been said upon the symbolical office of faith. If more were needed, it might be further observed, that such a view of it is congenial to the tone of thought which the Continental Reformers discover in other matters. As they considered prayers as *lectures*, Absolutions as *declarations*, the Eucharistic Commemoration as a *visible*

<sup>1</sup> Again: "Because faith doth *directly* send us to Christ for remission of our sins, and that by faith given us of God we *embrace the promise* of God's mercy and of the remission of sins, (which thing none other of our virtues or works properly doth,) therefore Scripture *useth to say*, that faith without works doth justify." Here is the reason for saying "*faith only*," and not "love only," or "obedience only," because *faith* directly "*sendeth* us to," or *preaches* "Christ." Observe, too, that still, as in the former cases, the Homily does not so much affirm that faith only *does* justify, "but is *said* to justify." Elsewhere faith is compared to John the Baptist, who "did put the people from him, and appointed them unto Christ." Was St. John an instrument, or but a preacher? "*I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance,*" &c.

*memento*, Mystical Rites as *edifying exhibitions*, (which they certainly are also,) so they regarded faith as the *symbol* of justification. Of course this is not the highest view of the doctrine; and our own Homilies, in another portion of the Book, go on to the higher, according to which it is an instrument, as has been shown. Well would it have been if all Protestant divines had done the same; but others, following out the view which was more peculiarly their patrimony as Protestants, have ended in the notion that justification is the feeling of satisfaction which belief in God's mercy inspires, and nothing more.

To sum up what has been said:—the question has been in what sense faith *only* justifies, for that it is *necessary* to our justification, all parties allow. I answer, it justifies only, in two ways, as the only inward *instrument*, and as the only *symbol*. Viewed as an instrument, it unites the soul to Christ through the Sacraments; viewed as a symbol it shows forth the doctrine of free grace. Hence it is the instrument of justification after Baptism; it is a symbol both before and after <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The reader will find several statements contained in this and in the 4th and 6th Lectures, more or less confirmed by Waterland (*on Justification*, Works, vol. ix). The strict Protestant and the Catholic views concerning justification by faith may be contrasted thus. On both sides the following points are believed, and as succeeding in the same order:—1.

That the inward grace of God is the first cause of faith. 2. That faith, so created, is mere faith. 3. That love (*ἀγάπη*, *charitas*) is afterwards imparted. They differ in this, that the Catholic identifies regeneration with the third of these three stages, and the Protestant with the first; the Catholic makes justification coincident with the third, and the Protestant with the second. The Catholic makes mere faith the preliminary condition, the Protestant the instrument of justification. The Catholic makes love the token of regeneration, (1 John iv. 7.) and the Protestant mere faith. The Catholic considers regeneration a gift of the Spirit, not promised except under the Gospel; the Protestant as common to all who have any holiness, or insight into the spiritual world, or perform any obedience. The Catholic holds, 1. mere faith: 2. justification and regeneration together: 3. *fides formata*. The Protestant, 1. regeneration: 2. mere faith, (*fides abstracta*): 3. justification: 4. *fides concreta*, i. e. *formata*.



## LECTURE XI.

---

### ON THE NATURE OF JUSTIFYING FAITH.

---

HEB. xi. 1.

“ Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.”

AFTER considering the office of faith, it fitly follows to inquire what it is, both in itself, and as existing in the regenerate. This I propose now to do, and in doing it shall have the guidance of a text, which approaches as nearly as any statement in Scripture to a formal definition. Our Church has no where defined faith. The Articles are entirely silent; and though the Homilies contain many popular descriptions, they present, as is natural, nothing consistent and accurate.

Religious faith is “the substance,” or the realizing of what as yet is not seen, but only “hoped for;” it is the making present what is future. Again: it is “the evidence” of what is not seen, that is, the ground or medium of proof, on or

through which it is accepted as really existing. In the way of nature, we ascertain the things around and before us, by sight; and things which are to be, by reason; but faith is our informant about things present which we do not see, and things future which we cannot forecast. And as sight contemplates form and colour, and reason the processes of argument, so faith rests on the divine word as the token and criterion of truth. And as the mind trusts to sense and reason, on a natural instinct, which it freely uses prior to experience, so in a parallel way, a moral instinct, supernaturally implanted, and independent of experience, is its impelling and assuring principle in assenting to revelation as divine. By faith then is meant the mind's perception or knowledge of heavenly things, arising from an instinctive trust in the divinity or truth of the external word, informing it concerning them<sup>1</sup>. Whether it acts upon that knowledge so obtained, depends upon something beyond, with which we are not now concerned, its particular state in a given case.

In other words, faith, as such, is not a practical principle or peculiar to religious men. Thus in matters of this world, men believe but are not

<sup>1</sup> ὡσπερ ὀφθαλμὸς δεῖται φωτὸς ἐπιδεικνύντος τὰ ὄρατα, οὕτω δὴ αἰὶ καὶ ὁ νοῦς δεῖται πίστεως ἐπιδεικνυούσης τὰ θεῖα, καὶ τὴν περὶ τούτων δόξαν φυλαττούσης βεβαίαν.—Theodor. adv. Gent. i. p. 714.

influenced unless they feel the matter to be important. On the other hand, if they are interested in it, they believe what they otherwise would not believe. So far, then, from faith directly causing action, action depends on circumstances on which faith also depends. Accordingly, there is nothing in the text to confine its definition to religious faith, except the indirect expression "hoped for;" which no one would say was strictly part of the definition. None, doubtless, but religious men can hope for what God's word announces; but leaving out this incidental word, the text might even be taken to describe the faith of evil spirits, which St. James both recognizes as faith, and discriminates from religious faith. Religious men believe and "*hope*;" "the devils believe and *tremble*." They believe in a judgment to come, for on one occasion they exclaimed against being "tormented before their time;" and on what, but God's infallible word announcing it? Thus dread and despair are the essential properties of the devil's faith; hope or trust of religious faith; but both are in their nature one and the same faith, as being simply the acceptance of God's word about the future and unseen. Religious faith is nothing else but the faith of the religious, and despairing faith is the faith of the despairing. Dead faith is the faith of the dead; lively faith is the faith of the living. Justifying faith, strictly speaking, is not trust, or adherence, or devotedness,

though in familiar language it allowably be so called, but faith,—the faith of trusting, adhering, devoted minds.

Faith, then, is not a virtue or grace in its abstract nature; else evil spirits could not possess it. It is so only under circumstances or in the particular case: Abraham's faith involved self-denial, the Blessed Virgin's faith implied love and hope. Faith is but an instrument, acceptable when its possessor is acceptable. And in this respect it differs from most other graces; that it is not an excellence except it be grafted into a heart that has grace. The devils cannot have love, humility, meekness, purity, or compassion,—they have faith. When, however, it is so grafted, then it makes progress, and the last becomes the first. "He raiseth up the poor out of the dust, and lifteth up the beggar from the dunghill, to set them among princes, and to make them inherit the throne of glory." And then it becomes the instrument of that favour which more properly attaches to the soul exercising it; as the eye is said to see, whereas it is the organ of the mind.

But though faith, considered by itself, is not a grace, it must be borne in mind that it never does exist by itself; it always exists *in* this person or that, and, as exercised by the one or the other, it must be either a grace or not. Faith in the abstract is a mere creation of the mind. The devils believe, and Christians believe; we may compare the two to-

gether, and observe that the outline of the faith in each is the same; they both realize the unseen and future on God's word. But an outline never exists by itself; it ever exists in a certain body or substance. One man is said to be the same as another man, when the mind contemplates them *as* man; yet after all the mind can but contemplate, it cannot alter what is external to it. In spite of its arbitrary abstractions, each existing man exists to himself, is an individual, complete in himself, independent of all others, differing from all others, in that he is he, and not they nor one with them, except in name. No one thing can be another thing; faith in this man is not faith in that; nay, the one is not necessarily like the other, except in outline, or as one kind of animal, for instance, is like another, or as a good spirit is like an evil one. An animal in the abstract, is neither man nor brute, but then there is no such thing as an abstract animal; every animal must be man or brute; and so faith, as actually existing, either is an excellence or it is not, though considered in its abstract nature it is neither one nor the other.

Or to take another illustration:—the animal nature, when found in man, is the organ of what neither the soul can do without it, nor it can do out of man. It sees, and enables us to read; yet no one would so confuse the case, as to say that the animal nature *as such* reads because we read *through* it. In some such way does faith stand

towards a right state of mind. Together they make up religiousness; the one reports, the other feels and acts on the report. Moral rectitude without faith would be a soul without eyes; faith without it would be perception without appreciation; it cannot read the message of mercy, though it gaze ever so hard; it is said to do so, as the eye is said to read, but it does not of itself really appreciate or obey it.

It would seem, then, that Luther's doctrine, now so popular, that justifying faith is trust, comes first, justifies by itself, and then gives birth to all graces, is not tenable; such a faith cannot be, and if it could, would not justify. For as it cannot exist except in this or that mind, so it cannot be as much as trust, but it is also hope<sup>1</sup>, nor hope without some degree of love. Mere trust as little gives birth to other graces as mere faith. It is common indeed to say that trust in the mercy of God in

<sup>1</sup> Luther and Calvin both virtually grant that faith and hope are inseparable, or parts of one thing, though Luther, and perhaps Calvin, deny it of faith and love. Reipsa igitur fides et spes vix discerni possunt, et tamen est aliquod discrimen inter ipsas. . . . Sicut . . . in politia prudentia sine fortitudine vana est, ita fides in Theologia sine Spe nihil est, quin spes fert et perdurat in malis et vincit ea. Et vicissim, sicut fortitudo sine prudentia temeritas est, ita spes sine fide præsumptio in spiritu. Luth. in Gal. v. 5. Fieri non poterit quin spem æternæ salutis comitem secum habeat *individuum*, vel potius ex se gignat et exerat, &c.—Calv. Instit. iii. 2. § 42. As to faith producing hope, if they are parts of one, this is a distinction merely in the way of viewing it.

Christ ensures all other graces, from the fertilizing effect of the news of that mercy on the heart. But surely that blessed news has no such effect unless the heart is *softened* to receive it; that softening then is necessary to justification, and by whatever name it is called, spiritual-mindedness, or love, or renewal, it is something more than trust<sup>1</sup>. That is, something more than trust is involved in justifying faith, or it is the trust of a renewed or loving heart. But after all it is an abuse of terms to go so far as to define faith to be trust, unless one might call the devil's faith despair. Faith is neither trust nor despair, but faith; though it takes the colour of trust or of despair according to the mind into

<sup>1</sup> Calvin attempts to overcome this obvious inference thus: Quoniam res maxime dubia est, uno verbo statuimus, eos inepte loqui quum fidem formari dicunt, accessione piæ affectionis ad assensum facta; quum assentio quoque pia affectione constet. Instit. ii. 2, 8. That is, assent is not made justifying by the presence of spiritual feeling, *because* justifying assent consists in spiritual feeling. Bucer is not more successful. Vera utique fides, certa que de Dei erga nos *bonitate* persuasio, illico ex se ejus *quoque* summum *amorem* ac reverentiam gignit, studiumque omnium quæ Deo probantur, et odium eorum quæ ille detestatur.—Enar. in Matt. viii. f. 83. Jackson puts the case clearly in his definition of faith, as “a firm and constant assent or adherence unto the mercies and loving-kindness of the Lord, or generally to the spiritual food exhibited in His sacred word, . . . grounded upon a taste or relish of their sweetness, wrought in the soul or heart of man by the Spirit of Christ.” B. iv. c. 9. p. 667. Jackson, however, does not allow this “taste of their sweetness” to involve love; but this seems a question of words.

which it is received. But this is a subject which admits of fuller statement.

Justifying faith, then, may be considered in two main points of view; either as it is in itself, and as it exists in fact in those who are under grace. In the former point of view it is not necessarily even a moral virtue; but when illuminated by love, and ennobled by the Spirit, it is a name for all graces together, as having in it the power of them all. In the alternative, then, between making it nothing and making it every thing, our Homilies have chosen the latter, and the Romanists the former. The Romanists define it almost in its bare distinctive outline, as it is in itself viewed apart from all circumstances or states of mind, as found in good and bad, as living and dead. They consider it *an assent* of the mind to God's word. On the other hand, our Homilies seem to consider that grace so changes its nature, that a description which comprises in one its state both before and after, is but a verbal generalization and a practical fallacy, as if a living body and a corpse were called by one name; and therefore that faith must not be called *real* unless it is *living*. Accordingly, instead of attempting a strict definition, they enlarge upon its properties in the regenerate, and set it before us in all the health, energy, and fulness of stature which grace bestows. Each party appeals to St. Paul in the text; but Romanists stop short at the words "substance" and "evidence," as including the whole



essence of faith, which in consequence is nothing more than evil spirits may have. Our Homilies, on the contrary, writing popularly, describe it to be trust and obedience as well as bare faith; as if arguing that St. Paul speaks of it as the substance of things *hoped for*, and appealing for its practical nature to the various instances of obedience which follow in the course of the chapter.

This will be plain to any one who consults the Homilies; which, as far as the words go, speak of faith not in its characteristic features, but as instinct with the whole “mind of the Spirit,” with the entire assembly of graces which belong to the regenerate. For instance; first they develope it into *trust* and *hope*, laying it down that a quick and living faith “is *not only* the common *belief* of the Articles of our faith, but it is *also* a true *trust and confidence* of the mercy of God through our Lord Jesus Christ, and a stedfast *hope* of all good things to be received at God’s hand<sup>1</sup>.” Of course this does not mean that faith is hope, or that, strictly speaking, faith is trust, which would be a misuse of words, but that that faith which justifies, is not mere faith, but faith in trust and hope, and trust and hope in it. The Homily in question proceeds: “Dead faith is not the sure and substantial faith which saveth sinners. Another faith there is in Scripture, which is not, as the foresaid faith, idle,

<sup>1</sup> Sermon of Faith, Part 1.

unfruitful, and dead, but '*worketh by charity,*' as St. Paul declareth Gal. v." Here then is another element of lively faith, *love*; mere faith does not justify, but faith which is one with love, animated and impregnated with love, and pouring itself out into trust or hope without ceasing to be faith. The Homily continues: "This is the true, lively, and unfeigned Christian faith, and is not in the mouth and outward profession only, but it liveth and stirreth inwardly in the heart. And this faith is not without hope and trust in God, nor without the love of God and of *our neighbours*; nor without *the fear of God*, nor without the *desire to hear* God's word, and to *follow* the same, *eschewing* evil, and *doing* gladly all good works." Thus faith, according to the Homilies, is one with a spirit of godly fear and holy obedience also; and what makes this passage clearer is the circumstance that, whereas faith is here said to be *not without* hope and trust," it was in the former passage said to *be* hope and trust, which shows that hope and trust are not to be taken as adjuncts merely, but characteristics of justifying faith itself; therefore that godly fear and that holy obedience, which in this last passage it is said not to be "without," are to be taken as characteristics also. A passage from another Homily is still more express: "There is one work *in the which be all good works*, that is, faith which worketh by charity. If thou have it, thou hast the *ground* of all good works; for the *virtues* of strength, wisdom

temperance, and justice, be all referred unto this same faith <sup>1</sup>." Thus all "virtues," which are the "ground" of good works, exist in and with the faith that justifies.

Such is the view taken of justifying faith in the Homilies, as extended out into that circle of graces of which it becomes the outline and peculiarity; whereas the Roman Church views it in that outline taken separately. The Homilies, being popular discourses, speak of it practically; Rome, speaking theologically, traces it to its elements. The one views it in the abstract, the other as it is in fact; the one considers it as the faith of the regenerate, the other as regenerate faith. Either notion is intelligible, whichever is the more adviseable; but what is not at all intelligible is the notion of the Protestant schools, which makes it neither the one nor the other, but more than one and less than the other, something between abstract and concrete, not mere assent to God's word, yet not so much as obedience, not bare faith, yet not living. Its upholders indeed boldly call their justifying faith, living, and reject the notion of its being bare faith; so far is well; but then they go on to define it to be mere *trust*, or a fiduciary apprehension of Gospel mercy. It will be said that our Homilies sometimes so speak of it; certainly they do, but they are popular addresses. It is quite another thing when statements,

<sup>1</sup> Sermon of Good Works, Part I.

which have a true and impressive *bearing*, are taken as adequate and accurate *definitions* of the matter in hand. No such statement occurs in our Articles; it does occur in the German Confessions<sup>1</sup> from which they are taken. The silence then of the Articles is significant. What I here am speaking of is a *formal declaration* that faith is trust; and I ask on what intelligible principle is it that the Divines who make it, leave *assent* without going on to *obedience*? Why if they begin to tint their outline do they not finish the colouring? why, if they will consider it as confident assurance, do they not allow it, as the Homilies do, to be hope, love, joy, peace, thanks-

<sup>1</sup> Et fidei vocabulum, non solum cognitionem historiæ de Christo significat, sed etiam credere et assentiri huic promissioni, quæ est Evangelii propria, in qua propter Christum nobis promittuntur remissio peccatorum, justificatio, et vita æterna. Conf. August, ed. 2, 1540. Illa fides, quæ justificat, non est tantum notitia historiæ sed est assentiri promissioni Dei.—Apol. Conf. August. Hæc fides simul est fiducia acquiescens in Mediatore.—Confess. Saxon. Jackson says that “confidence, fiducia, or trust,” is “so nearly allied to faith, that some include it in the essence or formal signification of the word in the learned tongues; which opinion may seem to have some countenance from the Book of Homilies. But what there is said of faith to this purpose, is a popular description, not an accurate or artificial definition, like as also we may not think the author of those Homilies meant formally and essentially to define faith, when he said that ‘faith is a firm hope,’ for so in the same place doth he describe it.”—B. iv. ch. 10, s. 6, p. 673. Jackson differs in some points from the view contained in these Lectures.

giving, devotedness, and all kinds of virtue, whatever indeed is necessary for "the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ?" Why do they say it only works *by* love and results *in* obedience, if they maintain it *is* trust? why must trust be part of its essence, yet love and obedience external to it? why must trust be any more than its necessary exhibition, as obedience is also? why should it cease to be justifying faith if called love or obedience, yet not if called trust? Yet such is the way of viewing it to which multitudes have accustomed them. They escape from the strict definition, then pitch their tent in the very middle of their route, dread to go forward, and burn at the notion of going back, and have recourse to cries of alarm, protestations, and threats if any the most gentle persuasion or most intelligible reason be used to turn them one way or the other.

This then is the false position, if I may so speak, which the schools in question have taken up. Their idea of faith is a mere theory, neither true in philosophy nor in fact; and hence it follows that their whole theology is shadowy and unreal. I do not say that there is no such thing as a trusting in Christ's mercy for salvation, and a comfort resulting from it. This would be resisting what we may witness daily, and what, under circumstances, it is our duty to exercise. Bad and good feel it. What is so unreal, is to say that it is necessarily a holy feeling, that it can be felt by none but the earnest, that a

mere trust, without any thing else, without obedience, love, self-denial, consistent conduct, conscientiousness, that this mere trust in Christ's mercy, existing in a mind which has as yet no other religious feeling, will necessarily renew the soul and lead to good works. This is the mere baseless and extravagant theory I speak of. Men may be conscious they trust; they may be conscious they gain comfort from trusting; they cannot be conscious that such a trust is practical; they cannot be conscious that it changes the heart. The event alone determines this. That it raises present emotions they may be conscious; that it is such as permanently to impress their inner man they cannot know, except they be prophets; for it is a thing future. It may, or it may not; and it is pernicious to say it must. However, to enter into its practical results, is beside my present subject.

Viewed in its theological aspect, in which it is now before us, it will be found to give a character of vagueness and equivocation to the whole system built upon it. What indeed can be expected but arbitrary distinctions and unreal subtleties in the conformation of a theology, which has a flaw in its leading principle, which starts with maintaining that faith is, what nothing ever was or can be, a living abstraction<sup>1</sup>,—an object or thing which contains

<sup>1</sup> Luther confesses, in so many words, that the faith that justifies is abstract *fides* as opposed to concrete, in Gal. iii. 10.

in it only what the name contains,—an aspect, side, quality, and property standing by itself,—and, as if this were not enough, when we go on to enquire *what* it is, that it is mere *trust*, yet necessarily *spiritual*? Hence, as it is not unnatural, it is a source of never-ending disputes between persons who seem to agree together, yet go away and act differently, and still wonder why they differ. I describe faith, and another describes it, and we use the same terms, yet agree in nothing else. Why is this? because I aim at contemplating things as they are and must be in their embodied form; and he has a notion that he may arrest and detain a certain portion of the idea of faith while in his mind it passes on from assent, through trust, into obedience, and may make it stand by itself, and produce results which he pleases to assign to it. The one view then differs from the other as the likeness of a man from the original. The picture resembles him; but it is not he. It is not a reality, it is all surface. It has no depth, no substance; touch it, and you will find it is not what it pretends to be. When I speak of faith, I am not speaking of a definition, or creation of the mind, but of something existing. I wish to deal with things, not with words. I do not look to be put off with a name or a shadow. I would treat of faith as it is actually found in the soul; and I say it is as little an isolated grace, as a man is a picture. It has a depth, a breadth, and a thickness; it has an inward life which is something over and

above itself; it has a heart, and blood, and pulses, and nerves, though not upon the surface. All these indeed are not *spoken* of, when we make mention of faith; nor are they painted on the canvass; but they are implied in the word, because they exist in the thing. What has been observed above, of the distinction between the meaning of the word and of the object *righteousness*, applies here. Love and fear, and heavenly-mindedness, and obedience, and firmness, and zeal, and humility, are as certainly included in justifying faith, considered as a thing existing, as bones, flesh, and vital organs are necessary to that outward frame of man which meets the eye, though they do not meet it. Love and fear and obedience are not really posterior to faith even a moment of time, unless bones or muscles are formed after the countenance and complexion. It is as unmeaning to speak of living faith, as if independent of newness of mind, as of solidity as divisible from body, or tallness from stature, or colour from the landscape. As well might it be said that an arm or a foot can exist out of the body, or that man is born with only certain portions, head or heart, and that the rest grows afterwards, as that faith comes first and gives birth to other graces. This illustration holds with only one limitation; that faith, though connatural with other graces, has a power of reacting upon them, by placing more constraining objects before them as motives to their more vigorous exercise.



This then is what is meant by the doctrine that faith is not justifying unless informed or animated by love; mere faith being impossible in a Christian, or any one else, existing only in our ideas, and not being a grace or virtue so viewed. That such is the doctrine of Scripture has been variously shown in the discussion of the subjects which have come before us. Here I will but cite two celebrated passages from St. James and St. Paul. St. Paul says, "Though I have *all faith* so that I could remove mountains, and have *not love*, I am nothing." And St. James, after warning his brethren against "holding the *faith*" of Christ "in respect of persons" that is, in an *unloving* spirit, as the context shows, proceeds to say that it is "*perfected* by works," and that "without works" it is "dead," as a body without the soul. That is, as the presence of the soul changes the nature of the dust of the earth and makes it flesh and bones, giving it a life which otherwise it could not have, so love is the modelling and harmonizing principle on which justifying faith depends, and in which it exists and acts.

But here it may be asked, how if all this be true, can faith have that distinguishing office under the Gospel which Scripture assigns to it. If it be not even a virtue in itself, and indebted for all its excellence to other qualities, it is at best nothing more than "a pitiful virtue<sup>1</sup>," to use the language of Luther's

<sup>1</sup> Vide Lecture I. p. 23, note.

objection, and not deserving that inspired writers should devote whole chapters to its consideration. To this I answer, that it is the glory and triumph of God's grace to raise the weak things of the world to subdue the strong, and things that are despised to confound the mighty; moreover, to transform our natural powers into angelic gifts, and to graft the branches of the wild olive tree into Himself, who is the fruitful vine. Such is the case with faith; that reliance on God's word which even bad men instance, when exercised by a regenerate mind, and impregnated with that of which it is the organ, sees sights, and works wonders, which are peculiar to itself, and thus gains for itself every the highest honour that is not inconsistent with St. Paul's decision, that love is greater than it. The analogy already used still holds; what is so vile and worthless as a dead body? yet, while it receives life from the soul, the soul, on the other hand, without it relapses into a state of inaction, and is severed from all perceptible intercourse with others. As then the resurrection will raise the body from the dust, yet complete the soul's bliss thereby, so the Gospel, while quickening our dead faith, has cast love into the shape of faith externally, and made faith minister to the perfecting of love.

I conclude, then, by stating what I conceive to be the special fruit or work of faith under the Gospel, and its influence upon the Christian; in doing which I shall assume, what this is not the place to

prove, that it is an original means of knowledge, not resolvable into sense or reason, confirmed indeed by experience, as they are, but founded on a supernaturally implanted instinct; an instinct developed by religious obedience, and determining the mind to the word of Christ and His Apostles as its refuge.

The Gospel, then, is specially the system of faith and "the law of faith," and its obedience is the "obedience of faith," and its justification is "by faith," and it is a "power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth," as contrasted to all religious systems which have gone before and come after, even those in which God has spoken. For at the time of its first preaching, the Jews went by sight and the Gentiles by reason; both might believe, but on a belief resolvable into sight or reason, neither went simply by faith. The Greeks sought after "wisdom," some original and recondite philosophy, which might serve as an "evidence" or ground of proof for "things not seen." The Jews, on the other hand, "required a sign," some sensible display of God's power, a thing of sight and touch, which might be "the substance," the earnest and security "of things hoped for." They wanted some carnal and immediate good, as "the praise of men;" for this they did their alms, fasted, and prayed, not looking on to witnesses unseen, but for an earthly reward; or, if they wrought for God, it was in a grudging, calculating way, as if to make their ser-

vices go as far as possible, resting in them as ends, and suspicious of God as of a hard or unjust Master. Such was the state of the world, when it pleased Almighty God, in furtherance of His plan of mercy, to throw men's minds upon the next world without any other direct medium of evidence than the word of man claiming to be His; to change the face of the world by what the world called "the foolishness of preaching" and the unreasoning zeal and obstinacy of faith, using a principle in truth's behalf which in the world's evil history has ever been the spring of great events and strange achievements. Faith, which in the natural man has manifested itself in the fearful energy of superstition and fanaticism, is in the Gospel grafted on the love of God, and made to mould the heart of man into His image.

The Apostles then proceeded thus:—they did not rest their cause on argument; they did not appeal to eloquence, wisdom, or reputation; nay, nor did they make miracles necessary to the enforcement of their claims<sup>1</sup>. They did not resolve faith into sight or reason; they contrasted it with both, and bade their hearers believe, sometimes in spite, sometimes in default, sometimes in aid of sight and reason. They exhorted them to make trial of the Gospel, since they would find their account in so doing<sup>2</sup>. And of their hearers "some believed the

<sup>1</sup> Vid. Acts xvii. 23; xxiv. 25.

<sup>2</sup> πότερον βέλτιόν ἐστιν αὐτοῖς ἀλόγως πιστεύουσι κατεστάλθαι πῶς τὰ ἦθη καὶ ὠφελῆσθαι, διὰ τὴν περὶ τῶν κολαζομένων ἐπὶ ἁμαρ-

things which were spoken, some believed not." Those believed whose hearts were "opened," who were "ordained to eternal life;" those did not whose hearts were hardened. This was the awful exhibition of which the Apostles and their fellow workers were witnesses; for faith, as a principle of knowledge, cannot be analyzed or made intelligible to man, but is the secret, inexplicable, spontaneous movement of the mind, (however arising,) towards the external word,—a movement not to the exclusion of sight and reason, for the miracles appeal to both, nor of experience, for all who venture for Christ receive daily returns of good in confirmation of their choice, but independent of sight or reason before, or of experience after. The Apostles appealed to their hearts, and, according to their hearts, so they answered them. They appealed to their secret belief in a superintending providence, in their hopes and fears thence resulting; and they professed to reveal to them the nature, personality, attributes, will, and works of Him "whom they ignorantly worshipped." They came as commissioned from Him, and declared that mankind was a sinful and outcast race,—that sin was a misery,—that the world was a snare,—that life was

*τίαις καὶ τιμωμένων ἐπὶ ἔργοις χρηστοῖς πίστιν, ἢ μὴ προσίεσθαι αὐτῶν τὴν ἐπιστροφὴν μετὰ ψιλῆς πίστεως, ἕως ἂν ἐπιδῶσιν ἑαυτοὺς ἐξετάσει λόγων; . . . ἢ περὶ τοῦ τὰ κρείττονα καὶ τὰ κατ' εὐχὴν ἀπαντήσεσθαι πίστις τολμᾶν πάντας ποιεῖ, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ ἀδύνατα καὶ ἄλλα ἄλλως συμβῆναι.—Orig. in Cels. i. 9—11.*

a shadow,—that God was everlasting,—that His Law was holy and true, and its sanctions certain and terrible ;—that He also was all-merciful,—that He had appointed a Mediator between Him and them, who had removed all obstacles, and was desirous to restore them, and that He had sent them to explain how. They said that Mediator had come and gone ; but had left behind Him what was to be His representative till the end of all things, His mystical Body, the Church, in joining which lay the salvation of the world. Thus they preached, and thus they prevailed, using persuasives of every kind as they were given them, but resting at bottom on a principle higher than the senses or the reason. They used many arguments, but as outward forms of something beyond argument. They appealed to the miracles they wrought, as sufficient signs of their power, and assuredly divine, in spite of those which other systems could show or pretended<sup>1</sup>. They expostulated with the better sort

<sup>1</sup> Paley, whose work on the Evidences is founded on the notion that the miracles wrought by Christ and His Apostles are to be *the ground* of our faith, feels the difficulty that *in fact* they were not so accounted in early times. After quoting passages of the Fathers in his favour, he adds, “ I am ready, however, to admit that the ancient Christian advocates did not insist upon the miracles in argument *so frequently as I should have done*. It was their lot to contend with notions of magical agency, against which the mere production of the facts was not sufficient for the convincing of their adversaries. *I do not know whether they themselves thought it quite decisive of the controversy.*”—

on the ground of their instinctive longings and dim visions of something greater than the world. They awed and overcame the wayward, by the secret influence of what remained of heaven in them, and the involuntary homage paid by such to any more complete realizing of it in others. They asked the more generous-minded whether it was not worth while to risk something on the chance of augmenting and perfecting those precious elements of good which their hearts still held; and they could not hide what they cared not to "glory in," their own disinterested sufferings, their high deeds, and their sanctity of life. They won over the affectionate and gentle by the beauty of holiness, and the embodied mercies of Christ as seen in their ministrations and ordinances. Thus they spread their nets for disciples, and caught thousands at a cast; thus they roused and inflamed their hearers into enthusiasm, till "the Kingdom of Heaven suffered violence, and the violent took it by force." And when these had entered it, many, doubtless, would wax cold in love, and fall away; for many have entered only on impulse; many, with Simon Magus, on wonder or curiosity; many from a mere argumentative belief, which leads as readily into heresy as into the Truth. But still, those who had the seed of God within them, would become neither

Part iii. c. 5, fin. Then on what *did* they believe? Again; are not philosophical objections as cogent now against miracles as the belief in magic then?

offences in the Church, nor apostates, nor heretics ; but would find day by day, as love increased, increasing experience that what they had ventured boldly amid conflicting evidence, of sight against sight, and reason against reason, with some things for it, and many things against it, they had ventured well. The examples of meekness, cheerfulness, contentment, silent endurance, private self-denial, fortitude, brotherly love, perseverance in well doing, which would from time to time meet them in their new kingdom,—the sublimity and harmony of the Church's doctrine,—the touching and subduing beauty of her services and appointments,—their consciousness of her virtue, divinely conveyed, upon themselves in subduing, purifying, changing them, —the bountifulness of her alms-giving, —her power, weak as she was and despised, over the statesmen and philosophers of the world,—her consistent and steady aggression upon it, moving forward in spite of it on all sides at once, like the wheels in the Prophet's vision, and this contrasted to the ephemeral and variable outbreaks of sectarianism <sup>1</sup>,—the

<sup>1</sup> ἔσβεστο μὲν γὰρ αὐτίκα, πρὸς αὐτῆς ἐνεργείας ἀπελεγχόμενα τὰ τῶν ἐχθρῶν ἐπιτεχνήματα, ἄλλων ἐπ' ἄλλαις αἰρέσεων καινοτομουμένων ὑποβρέουσῶν ἀεὶ τῶν προτέρων, καὶ εἰς πολυτρόπους καὶ πολυμόρφους ἰδέας ἄλλοτε ἄλλως φθειρομένων· προῆει δ' εἰς αὐξήσιν καὶ μέγεθος, ἀεὶ κατὰ τὰ αὐτὰ καὶ ὡσαύτως ἔχουσα, ἡ τῆς καθόλου καὶ μόνης ἀληθείας ἐκκλησίας λαμπρότης, τὸ σεμνὸν καὶ εἰλικρινὲς καὶ ἐλευθέριον, τό τε σῶφρον καὶ καθαρὸν τῆς ἐνθέου πολιτείας τε καὶ φιλοσοφίας εἰς ἅπαν γένος ἐλλήνων τε καὶ βαρβάρων ἀποστίλβουσα.—Euseb. Hist. iv. 7, fin.



unanimity and intimacy existing between her widely separated branches,—the mutual sympathy and correspondence of men of hostile nations and foreign languages,—the simplicity of her ascetics, the gravity of her Bishops, the awful glory shed around her Martyrs, and the mysterious and recurring traces of miraculous agency here and there, once and again, according as the Spirit willed,—these and the like persuasives acted on them day by day, turning the whisper of their hearts into an habitual conviction, and establishing in the reason what had been begun in the will. And thus has the Church been upheld ever since, by an appeal to the People,—to the necessities of human nature, the anxieties of conscience, and the instincts of purity; forcing upon Kings a sufferance or protection which they fain would dispense with, and upon Philosophy a grudging submission and a reserved and limited recognition.

Such was the triumph of Faith, spreading like a leaven through the thoughts, words, and works of men, till the whole was leavened. It did not affect the substance of religion; it left unaltered both its external developements and its inward character; but it gave strength and direction to its lineaments. The sacrifice of prayer and praise, and the service of an obedient heart and life, remained as essential as before; but it has infused a principle of growth. It has converted grovelling

essays into high aspirings,—partial glimpses into calm contemplation,—niggard payments into generous self-devotion. It enjoined the law of love for retaliation; it put pain above enjoyment; it supplanted polygamy by the celibate; it honoured poverty before affluence, the communion of Saints before the civil power, the next world before this. It made the Christian independent of all men and all things, except of Christ; and provided for a deeper humility, while it abounded in peace and joy.

## LECTURE XII.

---

### FAITH VIEWED RELATIVELY TO RITES AND WORKS.

---

ROM. iii. 28.

“ Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the Law.”

I NOW proceed to show that though we are justified, as St. Paul says, by faith, and, as our Articles and Homilies say, by faith only, nevertheless we are justified, as St. James says, by works; and to show in what sense this latter doctrine is true, and that, not only in the case of works of righteousness, but also of ritual services, such as Baptism, as St. Paul and St. Peter teach. And I have taken for a text St. Paul's decision that we are “justified by faith without the deeds of the Law,” in order, by the contrast of his real meaning, to show how far he is from asserting thereby that we are justified by faith without the deeds of the Gospel.

Now, I say at first sight, it is no contradicting of St. Paul to assert we are justified by faith *with*

evangelical works, unless St. James contradict him also. Those who object to the doctrine of justification through good works, must first object to St. James's Epistle, which they sometimes have done; on the other hand the temper of Christian reverence which will lead the disciple of St. Paul to submit to St. James, is also a spirit of charity towards those who speak with St. James, from a fear lest in condemning them it should resist an Apostle. With those then who judge severely of maintainers of justification by works, I would expostulate thus:—Why be so bent upon forcing two inspired teachers into a real and formal discordance of doctrine? If you could prove ever so cogently that when St. Paul said, “deeds of the Law,” he meant to include Christian works, you would not have advanced one step towards interpreting St. James, or impairing his authority; you would have only plunged into a more serious perplexity. Difficult if it be to account for St. Paul insisting on faith, and St. James at a later date insisting on works, surely it is not so great as to have proved that St. Paul excludes the very works which St. James includes. Is our Gospel like the pretended revelation of the Arabian imposter, a variable rule, the latter portion contradicting the former? Let men speak out then: what is their latent theory, which is sufficient to reconcile their minds to this previous difficulty, and under cover of an alleged contrariety

in Scripture, inspirits them to advance against Catholic and Apostolic truth?

I believe the latent view to be this; that the Scripture question was settled once for all three centuries since, when both the Holy Apostles were harmonized and merged in the formula of "justification by faith only;" which henceforth, in spite of the supposed liberty of private judgment, is practically the authentic standard of appeal to Protestants, as the Vulgate is to Romanists in their interpretation of Scripture; and because our Articles and Homilies contain this phrase, their doctrine in turn is to be merged in all that the Protestant schools have meant by it. But surely, while we accept fully this form of speech, as has been done in the foregoing Lectures, we may reasonably maintain that an assent to faith, as alone justifying, does not at all preclude the doctrine of works justifying also. If indeed I said that works justify in *the same sense* as faith only justifies, this would be a contradiction in terms; but faith only may justify in one sense, good works in another, and this is all that is here maintained. After all, does not Christ only justify? How is it that the doctrine of faith justifying does not interfere with our Lord's being the sole justifier? It will of course be replied that our Lord is the meritorious cause, and faith the means; that faith justifies in a different and subordinate sense. As then Christ justifies, *in the sense* in which He justi-

fies, alone, yet faith also justifies in its own sense, so works, whether moral or ritual, may justify us in their own respective senses, though in the sense in which faith justifies, it only justifies. The only question is *what* is that sense in which works justify, so as not to interfere with faith only justifying. It may indeed turn out on inquiring, that the sense alleged will not hold, either as being unscriptural or for any other reason; but, whether so or not, at any rate the difference of language should not startle persons; nor should they so promptly condemn those who, though they do not use *their* language, use St. James's. Indeed, is not this argument, as has been suggested already, the very weapon of the Arians in their warfare against the Son of God? They said, Christ is not God, because the Father is called the "*Only* God."

I might seem to grant just now that St. Paul's words, at first sight, countenanced the extreme Protestant view of them; but this is not at all the case, as a few remarks will show. The truth is, we associate a particular meaning with them, from having heard it again and again assigned to them, and thus every other interpretation comes to seem unnatural. The state of the case is as follows:—The Jews sought to be justified by works done in their own unaided strength, by the Law of Nature, as it was set before them in the Mosaic Covenant; and the Apostle shows them a more excellent way. He proposes to them the Law of Faith, and says

that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the Law ; moreover, that in so teaching, so far from making the Law void through faith, he establishes it. He means then to speak to the Jews as follows.—“ Throw yourselves on God’s mercy, surrender yourselves to Him ; the Law in which you pride yourselves, holy as it is in itself, has been to you but an occasion of sin. You are in bondage ; you have no real sanctity, no high aims, no inward growth, no power of pleasing God. Instead of having done any thing good, you have every thing to be forgiven. You must begin over again ; you must begin in a new way, by faith ; faith only, nothing short of faith, can help you to a justifying obedience. But faith is fully equal to enabling you to fulfil the Law. Far then from invalidating the Law by the doctrine of faith, I establish it.” Now I do not ask whether there is no other possible interpretation of his words besides this, (though I do think this the only natural one,) but whether, at least, it is not natural, whatever becomes of others ; and then, whether it is not perfectly consistent with St. James’s doctrine. It concerns those who are dissatisfied with it to assign one equally unexceptionable in itself, equally consistent with the rest of Scripture.

Justification comes *through* the Sacraments ; is received *by* faith ; *consists* in God’s inward presence and *lives* in obedience. Let us take some parallel cases.

Supposing one saw a Pagan or Mahometan at his devotions, or doing works of charity, and were to say, "Alas! your prayers and works will profit you nothing; you must believe on Christ; which will stand you in stead of all that you now do," would any one suppose it to be meant that Christians said no prayers, or gave no alms? or only that prayers and alms, when separate from Christ, were but dead and vain? But if he did so think, at any rate, whether with or without reason, he would be wrong in his interpretation of the words used.

Again: Scripture says that "the prayer of the *wicked* is an abomination to the Lord;" does this prove that the prayer of the righteous is an abomination also?

Again: when Almighty God says by the prophet, "I will have mercy, and not sacrifice," does this mean that the Jews were thenceforth to leave off their sacrifices, or that sacrifices were useless unless they *also* showed mercy?

Again: when our Lord censures the "long robes" of the Pharisees, does He censure them, as they are worn at present by His ministers in Church?

Again: when St. Paul declares that the Jewish Sabbath is abolished, does this prove there is no Christian Sabbath, or Lord's day?

This then is a mode of arguing which would carry us much further than we dare to go. It does not follow that works done in faith do not justify,



because works done without faith do not justify ; that works done in the Holy Ghost, and ordinances which are His instruments, do not justify, because carnal works and dead rites do not justify. There is nothing in the text to exclude the Works and Sacraments of faith ; all that can be said is they are not mentioned. St. Paul is urging upon his brethren the one *way* to salvation, which, as it is Christ Himself in God's sight, so it is faith on our part. He tells them they must be justified on a new principle ; new, that is, as being used under the Gospel for higher purposes than heretofore, and publicly recognized as the one saving principle. He guides them to heaven along a path by which alone they can ascend the mountain of the Lord, and which is called the way of faith, not that it does not lie through hope and charity too, but faith is the name designating the track. The principle of faith directed and sanctified their services : did it follow from this that it was (what is called) substantive, and could stand by itself, instead of being a quality or mode of obedience ? or that obedience itself, or what St. James calls works, could not be the substance ? If we refuse, not to modify, but even to complete one text of Scripture by another, will not admit the second merely because we prefer an interpretation of the first which contradicts it, will not hold two doctrines at once, merely because the text that declares the one does not also declare the other, if we will not say with St. James that works of faith

justify, merely because St. Paul says that faith justifies and works without faith do not justify, if we will demand that the whole of the Gospel should be brought out into form in a single text, then surely we ought to hold that Baptism is sufficient for salvation, because St. Peter says it "saves us,"—or hope sufficient, because St. Paul says "we are saved by hope,"—or that only love is the means of forgiveness, because our Lord says, "Her sins are forgiven, for she loved much,"—or that faith does not save, because St. James asks, "Can faith save him"—or that keeping the Commandments is the whole Gospel, because St. Paul says it has superseded circumcision. Nothing surely is more suitable than to interpret justifying faith, as a principle of action, a characteristic of obedience, or sanctifying power, if by doing so we reconcile St. Paul with St. James, and moreover observe the while the very same rule of interpretation which we apply to Scripture generally.

Thus much at first view of the subject; now let us take separately the two parts into which it divides, gospel ordinances and gospel works; and show in each case more distinctly their relation to faith.

1. It is objected, then, that under the Gospel, Ordinances are of little account, and that to insist on them is to bring the Church into bondage; that if Baptism convey regeneration, or the Apostolical Succession be the warrant for the Ministry, or Imposition of hands a spiritual benefit, or Consecration

required for giving and receiving the Lord's Supper, or its Celebration involve a sacrifice, in a word, if outward signs are necessary means of gospel grace, then St. Paul's statement does not hold that we are "justified by faith without the deeds of the Law."

Now, I observe, that this argument on the face of it proves too much; it proves that Christian rites should altogether be superseded as well as Jewish. Faith superseded circumcision; it did not supersede Baptism; there is then, on the face of the matter, some difference between Jewish and Christian Ordinances; and if the latter be *necessary* under the Gospel and the former not, perchance they are necessary *for some certain purpose*, and perchance that purpose is *justification*. Whether they are or not is another matter; but certainly this text is not inconsistent with it, or else is inconsistent with much more. If faith is compatible with their *use*, it may be compatible with their *virtue*.

But here it may be urged, that specious as this mode of arguing may be, it does not touch the real reluctance of religious persons to admit the power of Sacraments under the Gospel, or the grounds of their considering it unscriptural; that, as every one knows, there are explanations of the sacred text, which, however specious, are felt to be evasions; and that the interpretation proposed is utterly subversive of St. Paul's doctrine, and uncongenial with his spirit. No one can doubt, it may be said, that by the doctrine of Faith he meant to magnify God's

grace, to preach Christ's Cross, to inculcate its all-sufficiency for pardon and renewal, and our dependence on the aid of the Holy Spirit for the will and the power to accept these blessings; that on the other hand to say that Sacraments are the means of justification, obscures the free grace of the gospel, and is "putting a yoke on the necks of the disciples." Now this argument, in its place, certainly demands attention; I say in its place, by way of keeping clear of the practice, so common in these later centuries, of carrying off what is called the *spirit* of Scripture, mastering its *leading idea*, taking a general *view* of this or that argument, and the like. We must abandon all such attempts, if we would enter in at the strait and lowly gate of the Holy Jerusalem; bowing our heads and bending our eyes to the earth, not thinking to command the city, or letting the eye range over its parts, or flattering ourselves we can "mount up with eagles' wings," before we have first "waited on the Lord." Philosophizing upon the inspired text is a very poor method of interpreting it, though it be allowable under due limitations, after gaining its meaning in a legitimate way. With this caution, I proceed to consider the objection which has been stated.

I say then, that fully allowing, or rather maintaining that the scope of St. Paul's words is to show the nothingness of man and the all-sufficiency of Christ, and that this is the proper meaning of the doctrine of justification by faith, yet so far from the Catholic

doctrine concerning Sacraments interfering with this, I might apply the Apostle's words, and say, "Do we make void faith through the Sacraments? yea we establish faith." The proof of this is simple.

I allow, then, that faith exalts the grace of God; this is its office and charge: accordingly, whatever furthers this object, co-operates with the gospel doctrine of faith; whatever interferes with this object, contradicts the doctrine. Salvation by faith only is but another way of saying salvation by *grace* only. Again, it is intended to humble man, and to remind him that nothing he can do of himself can please God; so that "by faith" means, "*not* by works." If then the Sacraments obscure the doctrine of free grace, and tempt men to rest upon their own doings, then they make void the doctrine of faith; if not, then they do not; if they magnify God and humble man, then they even subserve it. This was the evil tendency of the Jewish rites when Christ came; they interfered between Christ and the soul. They were dark bodies, eclipsing the glorious Vision which faith was charged to receive. Now I would say, that the Sacraments have a directly reverse tendency, and subserve the object aimed at by the doctrine of faith, as fully as the Jewish ordinances counteracted it. If this be so, the doctrine of justification by Sacraments is altogether consistent, or rather coincident with St. Paul's doctrine in the text, that we are justified by faith without the deeds of the Law.

Upon Adam's fall, the light of God's countenance was withdrawn from the earth, and His presence from the souls of men ; nor was the forfeited blessing restored but by the death of Christ. The veil which hung before the Holy of holies, was a type of the awful "covering" which was "cast over all people;" and, when the Atoning Sacrifice was made, it rent in twain. Henceforth, heaven was opened again upon man, not on rare occasions, or in the instances of high Saints only, but upon all who believe. Such being the state of things before Christ came and the state after, the Law which was before could not be the means of life, because life as yet was not ; it was not wrought out, it was not created ; it began to be in Christ, the Word Incarnate. The Law could not justify, because whatever special favour might be shown here and there by anticipation, justification was not purchased as a free gift to all who sought it. God justified Abraham, and He glorified Elijah ; but He had not yet promised heaven to the obedient, or acceptance to the believing. He wrought first in the few what He offered afterwards to all ; and even in those extraordinary instances, He acted immediately from Himself, not through the Jewish Law as His instrument. Abraham was not justified through circumcision, nor Elijah raised by virtue of the Passover. Judaism had no life, no spirit in its ordinances to connect earth and heaven.

Accordingly, the ceremonies of the Law, though

given by God, were wrought out by man; I mean, as has been explained before, they were man's acts, not God's acts. They were done towards God, in order (if so be) to approach that which was not yet accorded; and thus were tokens, not of the presence of grace, but of its absence. Sacrifices and purifications, circumcision and the sabbath, could not take away sins, could not justify. Visible things are but means of grace at best; and they were not so much before grace was purchased. They were attempts in a bad case towards what was needed, they were the humble and anxious representation of nature, making dumb signs for the things it needed, as we provide pictures and statues when we have not the originals. Such was human nature in its best estate before Christ came; its worst was when it mistook the tatters of its poverty for the garments of righteousness, and, as in our Lord's age, prided itself on what it was and what it did, as if its own, its sacrifices, ceremonies, birth-place, and ancestry, as if these could stand instead of that justification which it needs. This was that reliance on the works of the Law, which St. Paul denounces, a reliance utterly incompatible of course with the doctrine of free grace, and of faith in consequence.

This then was the condition of the Jews; they had been told to approach God with works, which could not justify, *as if* they could; and the carnal minded among them mistook the semblance for the reality. But when Christ came, suffered, and as-

cended on high, then at length the promised grace was poured out abundantly, nay, for all higher purposes, far more so than on Adam upon his creation. What to the Jews then was impossible even to the last, is to us imparted from the first. They might not even end where we begin. They wrought towards justification, and we from it. They wrought without the presence of Christ, and we with it. They came to God with rites, He comes to us in Sacraments.

Now, supposing when any one desired and prayed for the gospel gifts, they were conveyed through the visible intervention of an Angel, would that Angel's presence be a memento of free grace, or a temptation to self-righteousness? Or did Naaman's bathing in Jordan naturally lead to self-trust and a practical forgetfulness of God's power? Did the necessity of coming to the Apostles for a cure inculcate the law of works or of faith? But it may be answered that such appointments *are* capable of being used in a superstitious dependence. Angels may be worshipped; Apostles venerated, as if they were not "also men." Let me then put the question in another shape,—does the *possibility* of the abuse destroy the *natural meaning* of the appointment? Was not the Brazen Serpent worshipped in a corrupt age; yet our Lord still appeals to its legitimate meaning as a token of God's free grace. If the ordinance of the Brazen Serpent, which had been abused, still conveyed the doctrine



coupled with it by Christ Himself, of "everlasting life" to those that "believe," surely Baptism, which had not been abused, might in St. Paul's mind be deemed consistent with the doctrine of justification by faith without deeds of the Law; surely he might discard the latter without meaning to include the former. St. Peter teaches us the same lesson after curing the lame man; he and St. John had been the visible means of the cure; "all the people ran together unto them greatly wondering." If there be a tendency anywhere superstitiously to rest in the outward part of Baptism or of the Lord's Supper, or in their circumstances, or in other Christian rites, with that "amazement" which the Jews felt towards the Apostles, why must we deny their instrumentality in order to give glory to God? why is it not enough, with St. Peter, to lead the mind, not from, but through the earthly organ to the true Author of the miracle, not denying a subordinate truth in order to enforce a higher? "Ye men of Israel," he says, "why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as if though by *our own* power or holiness we had made this man to walk?" And surely, what St. Peter proclaimed by word of mouth, that the Sacraments proclaim from the first by their symbolical meaning and their simplicity. Nay, and independent of this, surely what is professedly a channel of mercy, is an emblem of that mercy; what conveys a gift, speaks of a gift.

Under the Law, God was in "clouds and darkness;" in heaven, "the Lord God will lighten" the Temple face to face; but under the Gospel, He is as upon the Mount of Transfiguration, in "a bright cloud overshadowing" us; and as well may such a cloud be said to obscure the sun which gilds it, as Sacraments to obscure that grace which makes them what they are. Hence Baptism was even called of old the Sacrament of faith, as being on the part of the recipient, but an expression by act of what in words would be "I believe and I come." And what is meeting together for prayer but an act of faith and nothing more? What the Jews journeyed up to Jerusalem, not to receive, but to ask, is brought home to us, almost to our very doors, not in promise merely, but in substance; according to our Saviour's condescending words, "If any man hear My voice and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him and he with Me." And all this is "without money and without price;" expensive sacrifices were required of the Jews, and intricate rules prescribed; but the Gospel rites are so simple, that the world despises them for their very simplicity.

In a Jewish ordinance, then, man worked and God accepted; in a Christian, God speaks the word, and man kneels down and is saved. Such is the relation between Faith and Sacraments, in considering which I have taken "faith" in the sense in which the objection uses it, not in its proper sense as submission to what is unseen, but as trust

founded upon that submission ; and it appears, that while the Sacraments are an exercise of submission, they are also a lesson of trust.

2. Faith, then, is inculcated in their outward sign, and required for their inward grace ; and is as little disparaged by the Catholic doctrine concerning them, as Christ Himself by the doctrine of faith. Now let us proceed to the second part of the subject, the relation between Faith and Works, which, though quite distinct from the former, may be conveniently considered in connexion with it.

St. Paul says that we are “justified by faith without the deeds of the Law ;” and St. James, “not by faith only but by works ;” are these statements inconsistent ? Now, as I said before, to condemn works without faith is surely quite consistent with condemning faith without works. St. James says, we are justified by works, not by faith only ; St. Paul implies, by faith, not by works only. St. Paul says that works are not available before faith ; St. James, that they are available after faith. And now I will make this clearer.

St. Paul says, we are justified without works ; what works ? “works of,” or done under, “the Law,” the Law of Moses, through which the Law of Nature spoke in the ears of the Jews. But St. James speaks of works done under what he calls “the royal Law,” “the Law of liberty,” which we learn from St. Paul is “the Law of the Spirit of life,” for “where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty ;”

in other words, the Law of God as written on the heart by the Holy Ghost. St. Paul speaks of works done under the letter, St. James of works done under the Spirit. This is surely an important difference in the works respectively mentioned.

Or, to state the same thing differently: St. James speaks, not of mere works, but of works of faith, of good and acceptable works. I do not suppose that any one will dispute this, and therefore shall take it for granted. St. James then says, we are justified, not by faith only, but by *good* works. Now St. Paul is not speaking at all of good works, but of works done *in the flesh*, and of themselves “deserving God’s wrath and damnation.” He says, “without *works* ;” he does not say without *good* works; whereas St. James is speaking of them solely. St. Paul speaks of “works done before the grace of Christ and the inspiration of His Spirit ;” St. James of “good works which are the fruits of faith and follow after justification.” Faith may justify without such works as “have the nature of sin,” and yet not without such as “are pleasing and acceptable to God in Christ.”

Now in proof of this distinction it is enough to observe, that St. Paul never calls those works which he says do not justify “good works,” but simply “works,”—“works of the Law,”—“deeds of the Law,”—“works not in righteousness,”—“dead works ;”—what have these to do with works or fruits of the Spirit ? Of these too St. Paul elsewhere

speaks, and by a remarkable contrast he calls them again and again "good works." For instance; "By grace are ye saved through faith, . . . not of *works*, lest any man should boast; for we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto *good works*." This surely is a most pointed intimation that the works which do not justify, are not good, or in other words, are works *before* justification. As to works after, which *are* good, whether they justify or not, he does not decide so expressly as St. James, the error he had to resist leading him another way. He only says, against the Judaizing teachers, that our works must begin, continue, and end in faith. But to proceed; he speaks elsewhere of "abounding in every *good work*," of being "fruitful in every *good work*," of being "adorned with *good works*," of being "well reported of for *good works*," "diligently following every *good work*," of "the *good works* of some being open beforehand," of being "rich in *good works*," of being "prepared unto every *good work*," of being "thoroughly furnished unto all *good works*," of being "unto every *good work* reprobate," of being "a pattern of *good works*," of being "zealous of *good works*," of being "ready to every *good work*," of being "careful to maintain *good works*," of "provoking unto love and to *good works*," and of being "made perfect in every *good work* <sup>1</sup>." Now surely

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xvi. 10. 2 Cor. ix. 8. Col. i. 10. 2 Thess. ii. 17.

this is very remarkable. St. James, though he means good works, drops the epithet, and only says works? Why does not St. Paul the same? why is he always careful to add the word *good*, except that he had also to do with a sort of works with which St. James had not to do,—that the word *works* was already appropriated by him to those of the Law, and therefore that the epithet *good* was necessary, lest deeds done in the Spirit should be confused with them<sup>1</sup>?

St. Paul, then, by speaking of faith justifying without works, means without corrupt and counterfeit works, not without good works. He does not deny what St. James affirms, that we are justified in the latter. So far I consider proved, and now the question follows *in what sense* good works justify, on the supposition that faith is, as I have elsewhere shown, the only instrument or connecting bond between the soul and Christ.

“By works,” says St. James, “a man is justified, and not by faith only.” Now let any bystander in the controversy decide whether due weight is given to these words by those who determine that the doctrine of justification by faith only is all in all. What texts do their opponents shrink from as they from this? do they even attempt to explain it? or

1 Tim. ii. 10; v. 10. 25; vi. 18. 2 Tim. ii. 21; iii. 17. Tit. i. 16; ii. 7. 14; iii. 8. 14. Hebr. x. 24; xiii. 21.

<sup>1</sup> Bull, Harm. ii. 12. § 3.

if so, is it not by some harsh and unnatural interpretation? Next, do they not proceed, as if distrusting their own interpretation, to pronounce the text difficult and so dispose of it? yet who can honestly say that it is in itself difficult? rather, can words be plainer, were it not that they are forced into connexion with a theory of the 16th century; and then certainly they become as thick darkness, "as a book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee; and he saith, I cannot, for it is sealed<sup>1</sup>." If St. James is difficult, is St. Paul plain? will any one say that St. Paul is plainer than St. James? Is it St. James in whose Epistles are "some things hard to be understood?" What, then, is this resolute shutting of the eyes to an inspired Apostle, but the very spirit which leads the Socinian to blot out from certain texts, as far as his faith is concerned, the divinity of Christ? If we may pass over "By works a man is justified, and not by faith only," why may we not "I and My Father are One?" Can we, with unruffled countenance and stedfast eyes, call it self-will to refuse the witness of the latter, yet assume arbitrarily to assign or deny a sense to the former? What is meant by maintaining the duty of a man's drawing his Creed from Scripture for himself, and yet telling him it is a deadly heresy to say, just what St. James says, and

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah xxix. 11.

what St. Paul (to say the least) does not deny? But in truth, after all, men do not make up their mind from Scripture, though they profess it; they go by what they call their inward experience. They fancy they have reasons in their own spiritual history for concluding that God has taught them the doctrine of justification without good works; and by these they go. They cannot get themselves to throw their minds upon Scripture; they argue from Scripture only to convince others, but you may defeat them again and again, without moving or distressing them; they are above you, for they do not depend on Scripture for their faith at all, but on what has taken place within them<sup>1</sup>." But to return:—

If then we take for granted, as we ought to do, that St. James means what he says, and what St. Paul does not deny, that we are "justified by works and not by faith only," we shall find our account in so doing, by being able to reconcile the two Apostles at once without difficulty. That difficulty has in no small measure been created by want of faith, and of honesty, and by the vague assertions passing

<sup>1</sup> A candid writer has confessed this:—"It is difficult," says Milton, "to conjecture the purpose of Providence in committing the writings of the New Testament to such uncertain and variable guardianship, unless it were to teach us by this very circumstance, that the Spirit which is given to us is *a more certain guide than Scripture*, whom therefore it is our duty to follow."—*Christian Doctrine*, i. 30.



to and fro that there is difficulty. Works then justify, not by themselves, as independent or (what may be called) substantive services, but as adjuncts, or organs of faith, as viewed in faith, as having their principle of existence in faith, and being its external manifestations or acts; and accordingly they may be called justifying or not, according as they are in our minds associated or contrasted with faith. Thus to take an illustration: the body wholly depends on, and exists in the soul, which is its true life. Would it not be quite intelligible and consistent to say, first, that the soul only had the power of thinking, and then that we think through the brain?—Or again, to refer to the subject just treated of, God's grace alone renews us, yet it is given through the Sacraments; as then we say, without contradicting ourselves, first, that the Holy Spirit regenerates us, then that Baptism regenerates, so may we say that faith justifies us through works as its connatural acts. Once more:—what is sanative in certain drugs is some essence or principle which sometimes cannot be extracted, sometimes, though it can, is not sanative when separate. Now no one would doubt in such cases what really was the medicinal principle, no one would doubt the uselessness of the drug without it; yet would it not be intelligible, true, and important to insist on the drug as the proper remedy for a certain ailment, and to say that it was idle to seek or useless to find the uncompounded principle which gave it virtue?

In like manner faith justifies, but it is faith *in* works, as a sovereign acting in his high and solemn court.

Let it be considered that faith is a *habit* of the soul: now a habit is a something permanent, which affects the character; it is a something in the mind which develops itself through acts of the mind, and disposes the mind to move in this way, not in that. We do not know what it is in itself, we only know it in its results; relatively to us, it exists only in its results. We witness certain deeds, a certain conduct, we hear certain principles professed, all consistent with each other, and we refer them to something in the mind as the one cause of what is outwardly so uniform. When we speak of a bountiful man, we mean a man who thinks and does bountifully; and if we were to say that God will reward bountifulness, we should mean bountiful acts. In like manner when we speak of a believer, we mean a man who thinks and does, that is, of a mind that acts, believably; and when we say that God justifies by faith on our part, we mean by acts of whatever kind done in faith. It will be replied that this is true indeed, but that the acts in which faith shows itself are not works, but good feelings, thoughts, aspirations, and the like. Let it be so; let us so take it for argument's sake. The acts then in which faith shows itself are to be considered, not as deeds or services, but what are popularly called spiritual desires, and a willingness to renounce self

and adhere to Christ. Let us suppose this; even then, it seems, *some* manifestations are required. So much is this felt by the persons against whom I am arguing, that they consider baptized infants cannot be regenerate, because they show no *signs* of regeneration; a poor reason truly, for habits may exist without showing themselves to us, and, for what we know, God may bestow on infants in Baptism the element of justifying faith, though by reason of their tender age it be latent and undeveloped, as the Lutherans themselves have before now maintained; (though now, such is the course of error, they rather deny them regeneration than attribute to them faith;) however, this insisting upon signs and tokens at least proves how strongly the persons in question hold that faith cannot exist without its manifestations. They do certainly think both that faith only justifies, and yet that faith does not justify, does not exist, except in certain manifestations. Now supposing St. James had spoken thus: "What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and has no experience of the love of Christ, no spiritual-mindedness, no renewed taste, and holy affections? can faith save him? If he has no knowledge of his sin and deadness, if he has not brought himself to renounce his own merit and fly for safety to the appointed refuge for sinners, what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it be not truly warm and experimental, is dead. . . . Ye see then, my brethren, that a man is justified by having a

renewed and converted heart, and not by faith only." I say, supposing St. James had thus spoken, would they have found any repugnance between his doctrine and St. Paul's? would they have denied the Epistle to be genuine, or maintained it was difficult, or gone into this or that rival extravagance of interpretation in order to cripple an Apostle into Lutheranism? No, surely, they would have taken the words as they stand, and thought them a powerful argument in behalf of what they miscall "spiritual religion." As then they would not have declined the inspired message, had it said that faith was dead, not justifying, without a change of heart, why should there be any insuperable difficulty, any contradiction to St. Paul, in its saying that acts of the mind are part of true faith as they make emotions to be,—that its life is like the life of other graces, of benevolence, or zeal, or courage, not good feelings only, but services or works? What contradiction indeed is there between St. Paul and St. James but one of their own making, arising from their assumption that faith, unlike benevolence, manifests itself or lives, not in deeds, but in passive impressions?

And that this assumption, contrary as it is to philosophy, is contrary also to revealed truth, is plain, from this one circumstance, which should be carefully noticed:—that whereas St. Paul says we are justified by faith, and St. James by works, yet St. Paul's *instances* of justification by faith are occasions, not on which persons *felt* any thing unusual,

but when they did something unusual, nay by a most remarkable, not to say providential coincidence, they are the very instances employed by St. James. St. Paul, instancing justifying faith, does not say, Abraham said he was "dust and ashes," (which he did say,) and so was justified; Moses desired to see God's glory, and so was justified; David, as his Psalms show, was full of holy aspirations, and so was justified; no, but Abraham and the Patriarchs, Moses and the Prophets, David and the Confessors, did strong deeds of righteousness: they not only "*confessed* they were strangers and pilgrims upon earth," but they "*obeyed*;" they "went out," they "chose affliction with the people of God:" they "stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the violence of fire, waxed valiant in fight; they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins, in deserts and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth: they had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, of bonds and imprisonment; they were tortured, they were stoned, they were sawn asunder, they were slain with the sword:"—these are the acts of justifying faith, these are its life, and no one can deny that they are deliberate and completed works; so that, if faith be justifying, it justifies in acts and not out of them.

But this is not all; St. Paul uses the *same* instances as St. James. He says, "By *faith* Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac;" and St. James, "Was not Abraham our father justified by *works*, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?"

St. Paul, "By *faith*, the harlot Rahab perished not with them that were disobedient, when she had received the spies with peace;" St. James, "Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by *works*, when she had received the messengers and had sent them out another way?" Do not these parallels show that faith is practically identical with the works of faith, and that *when* it justifies, it is as existing in works? And farther, the Apostles are so coincident in expression, as to lead forcibly to the notion, which obtained in the early Church, that St. James was alluding to St. Paul's words, and fixing their sense by an inspired comment. Nor yet is this all; as if with a wish to show us how to harmonize his teaching with St. Paul's, he uses words, which exactly express and sanction the very mode of reconciliation which I have been enforcing. "Seest thou," he says, "how faith *wrought with his (Abraham's) works*, and by works was faith *made perfect*?" Thus works are the limit and completion of faith, which gives them a direction and gains from them reality. He adds to the same purport; "As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also;" action is the life of a habit.

The same doctrine is contained all through Scripture; in which God's mercies are again and again promised to works, sometimes of one kind, sometimes of another, but all as acts and representatives

of faith. For instance Solomon speaks of almsgiving as justifying; "By *mercy* and truth iniquity is purged." So does Daniel, saying to Nebuchadnezzar, "Break off thy sins by righteousness, and thy iniquities by showing mercy to the poor." Our Lord also, "Rather give alms of such things as ye have, and behold all things are clean unto you." And St. James, "mercy rejoiceth against judgment<sup>1</sup>."

In the Prophet Isaiah justification is ascribed to good works generally. He proclaims the gracious message that, "though our sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow," and "though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool." Here is an evangelical promise; why then is there nothing about justifying faith? why, but that faith is signified and is secured by other requisites, by good works? Accordingly the Prophet thus introduces the message of pardon—"Wash you, make you clean, put away the evil of your doings from before Mine eyes, cease to do evil, learn to do well, seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow." In like manner Ezekiel: "If the wicked restore the pledge, give again that he had robbed, walk in the statutes of life, without committing iniquity, he shall surely live, he shall not die; none of his sins that he hath committed

<sup>1</sup> Prov. xvi. 6. Dan. iv. 27. Luke xi. 41. James ii. 13.

*shall be mentioned* unto him <sup>1</sup>." Here again the promise must be evangelical; for under the Jewish Law there were no "statutes of life."

Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, was justified by an act of zeal: "Then stood up Phinehas and executed judgment, and so the plague was stayed. And that was counted unto him for righteousness unto all generations for evermore <sup>2</sup>."

Zacharias and Elizabeth were "both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless <sup>3</sup>." Words cannot be stronger to express the justification of these holy persons, than that they were "blameless and righteous *before God*;" yet this gift is not coupled with faith, but with acts of obedience to the special and particular commandments of God.

In like manner St. John teaches, that "walking in the light" justifies us; "If we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, *and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son* cleanseth us from all sin <sup>4</sup>."

To these may be added such instances as Christ's warning to the two brethren of the consequences of becoming His disciples; His bidding us count the cost of following Him, and to take up our cross, deny ourselves and come after Him; moreover in His going into the wilderness, whither the multi-

<sup>1</sup> Isai. i. 16—18. Ez. xxxiii. 15, 16.

<sup>2</sup> Ps. cvi. 30, 31.

<sup>3</sup> Luke i. 6.

<sup>4</sup> 1 John i. 7; iii. 7.



tudes had to seek Him at the price of privation and suffering.

And as works are acts of faith, so the mental act of faith is a work. Thus our Saviour says to the father of the demoniac, "If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth;" and he answers, "Lord, I believe, help Thou mine unbelief." In like manner St. Paul speaks of Abraham "staggering not at the promise of God through unbelief, but being strong in faith, giving glory of God, and being fully persuaded what He had promised He was able also to perform." "And *therefore*," he adds, "it was imputed to him for righteousness."

Lastly, leaving Scripture, I will quote a passage from Luther, in which he will be found to corroborate by his testimony what has been said; not willingly as the extract itself shows, but from the stress of texts urged against him. I take him, then, for what he says, not for what he does not say.—

"<sup>1</sup> It is usual with us," he says, "to view faith, sometimes apart from its work, sometimes with it. For as an artist speaks variously of his materials, and a gardener of a tree, according as it is in bear-

<sup>1</sup> Deinde hoc modo etiam distinguere solemus fidem, quod fides aliquando accipiatur extra opus, aliquando cum opere. Ut enim artifex varie de sua materia, et hortulanus de arbore vel nuda vel gestante fructum loquitur, ita et Spiritus Sanctus in Scriptura varie de fide loquitur, jam de fide (ut sic dicam) abstracta vel absoluta, jam de fide concreta, composita, seu incarnata, &c. &c. In Gal. iii. 10.

ing or not, so also the Holy Ghost speaks variously in Scripture concerning faith; at one time of what may be called abstract faith, faith as such; at another of concrete faith, faith in composition or incarnate. Faith, as such, or abstract, is meant, when Scripture speaks of justification, as such, or of the justified. (Vid. Rom. and Gal.) But when it speaks of rewards and works, then it speaks of faith in composition, concrete or incarnate. For instance; 'Faith which worketh by love;' 'This do and thou shalt live;' 'If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments;' 'Whoso doeth these things, shall live in them;' 'Cease to do evil, learn to do well.' In these and similar texts, which occur without number, in which mention is made of doing, believing doings are always meant; as, when it says, 'This do and thou shalt live,' it means, 'First see that thou art believing; that thy reason is right and thy will good, that thou hast faith in Christ; that being secured, work.'" Then follows an illustration of a very sacred character, which I quote, yet wishing I were using the words of some one else. "How is it wonderful, that to that incarnate faith, that is, faith working, as was Abel's, in other words, to believing works, are annexed merits and rewards? Why should not Scripture speak thus variously of faith, considering it so speaks even of Christ, God, and man; sometimes of His entire Person, sometimes of one or other of His two natures, the Divine or human. When it speaks of one or other of

these, it speaks of Christ in the abstract ; when of the Divine made one with the human in one Person, of Christ as if in composition and incarnate. There is a well known rule in the Schools concerning the ‘*communicatio idiomatum*,’ when the attributes of His divinity are ascribed to His humanity, as is frequent in Scripture ; for instance, in Luke ii. the Angel calls the infant born of the Virgin Mary, ‘the Saviour’ of men, and ‘the Lord’ both of Angels and men, and in the preceding chapter, ‘the Son of God.’ Hence, I may say with literal truth, That Infant who is lying in a manger and in the Virgin’s bosom, created heaven and earth, and is the Lord of Angels. . . . As it is truly said, Jesus the Son of Mary created all things, so is justification ascribed to faith incarnate or believing deeds.”

Such, then, is justifying faith ; it justifies as including all other graces and works in and under it ; it justifies only, because it alone makes them what they are, it alone unites them to the Spirit of Christ, and assimilates them to itself. Thus faith and other graces, and faith and works, act and react on each other. What is its special justifying power, and what its connexion with hope, love, and universal holiness, has been discussed in former Lectures ; here I am speaking of its relation to outward works, and I say that, viewed as justifying, it is not a shadow or phantom, which flits about without voice or power, but it is faith developed into height and depth and breadth, as if in a bodily

form, not as a picture but as an image, with a right side and a left, a without and a within; not a mere impression, or gleam upon the soul, or knowledge, or emotion, or conviction, which ends with itself, but the beginning of that which is eternal, the operation of the Indwelling Power which acts from within outwards and round about, works in us mightily, so intimately with our will as to be in a true sense one with it; pours itself out into our whole mind, runs over into our thoughts, desires, feelings, purposes, attempts, and works, combines them all together into one, makes the whole man its one instrument, and justifies him into one just and gracious work, one embodied act of faith, one "sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is our reasonable service." Such is faith, springing up out of the immortal seed of love, and ever budding forth in new blossoms and maturing new fruit, existing in feelings but passing on into acts, into victories of whatever kind over self, being the power of the will over the whole soul for Christ's sake, constraining the reason to accept mysteries, the heart to acquiesce in suffering, the hand to work, the feet to run, the voice to bear witness, as the case may be. These acts we sometimes call labours, sometimes endurances, sometimes confessions, sometimes devotions, sometimes services; but they are all instances of self-command arising from Faith seeing the invisible world, and Love choosing it.

It seems, then, that whereas Faith on our part fitly answers or is the correlative, as it is called, to grace on God's part, Sacraments are but God's acts of grace, and good works are but our acts of faith ; so that whether we say we are justified by faith, or by works, or by Sacraments, all these but mean this one doctrine, that we are justified by grace, given through Sacraments, impetrated by faith, manifested in works.

## NOTE TO LECTURE XII.

FROM what has been said, it would seem that while works before justification are but conditions and preparations for it, works after justification are much more, and that, not only as being intrinsically good and holy, but as being fruits of *faith*. And viewed as one with faith, which is the appointed instrument of justification after Baptism, they are in one sense instruments too,—as being connatural with faith and indivisible from it, organs through which it acts and which it hallows,—instruments with faith of the continuance of justification, or in other words, *of the remission of sin after Baptism*. Since this doctrine sounds strange to the ears of many in this day, and the more so because they have been taught that the doctrine of the Homilies, which our Church has authoritatively sanctioned, is decidedly opposed to it, I make the following extracts from that important work, for the accommodation of the general reader who may not have it at hand. Deeply is it to be regretted that a book, which contains “doctrine” so “godly and wholesome and necessary for *these Times*,” as well as for the 16th century, should popularly be known only by one or two extracts, to the omission of such valuable matter as shall now be quoted:—

“Our Saviour Christ in the Gospel teacheth us, that it profiteth a man nothing to have in possession *all the riches of the whole world*, and the wealth and glory thereof, if in the mean season he lose his soul, or do that thing whereby it should become captive unto death, sin, and hell-fire. By the which saying, he not only instructeth us how much the soul’s health is to be preferred before worldly commodities, but it also serveth to stir up our minds and to prick us forwards to seek diligently and learn by *what means* we may preserve and keep our souls

ever in safety, that is, *how we may recover our health* if it be lost or impaired, and how it may be defended and maintained, if once we have it. Yea, He teacheth us also thereby to esteem that *as a precious medicine* and an inestimable jewel, that *hath such strength and virtue in it*, that can either procure or preserve so incomparable a treasure. For if we greatly regard that medicine or salve that is able to heal sundry and grievous diseases of the body, much more will we esteem that which hath *like power over the soul*. And because we might be better assured both to know and to have in readiness *that so profitable a remedy*, He, as a most faithful and loving teacher, showeth Himself both what it is, and where we may find it, and *how we may use and apply it*. For, when both He and His disciples were grievously accused of the Pharisees, to have defiled their souls in breaking the constitutions of the Elders, because they went to meat and washed not their hands before, according to the custom of the Jews, Christ, answering their superstitious complaints, teacheth them *an especial remedy how to keep clean their souls*, notwithstanding the breach of such superstitious orders; ‘*Give alms,*’ saith He, ‘and behold all things are clean unto you.’

“He teacheth, then, that to be merciful and charitable in helping the poor, *is the means* to keep the soul pure and clean *in the sight of God*. We are taught therefore by this, that *merciful almsgiving is profitable to purge the soul from the infection and filthy spots of sin*. The same lesson doth the Holy Ghost also teach in sundry other places of the Scripture, saying, ‘Mercifulness and almsgiving purgeth from all sins, and delivereth from death, and suffereth not the soul to come into darkness<sup>1</sup>.’ *A great confidence* may they have *before the high God*, that show mercy and compassion to them that are afflicted. The wise Preacher, the Son of Sirach, confirmeth the same, when he saith, that ‘as water quengeth burning fire, even so

---

<sup>1</sup> Tobit iv.

mercy and alms resisteth and reconcileth sins.' And sure it is, *that mercifulness quaiileth the heat of sin so much*, that they shall not take hold upon man to hurt him ; or *if ye have by any infirmity or weakness been touched and annoyed with them, straightways shall mercifulness wipe and wash them away, as salves and remedies to heal their sores* and grievous diseases. And therefore that holy father Cyprian taketh good occasion to exhort earnestly to the merciful work, to giving alms and helping the poor, and then he admonisheth to consider how wholesome and profitable is it to relieve the needy and help the afflicted, *by the which we may purge our sins* and heal our wounded souls."

Such is the virtue of works, not before justification but after, as the means of keeping and restoring, not of procuring it, as fruits of faith done in the grace of Christ and by the inspiration of His Spirit, not as dead works, done in the flesh, and displeasing to God. Attention should be especially called to a parallelism between one sentence in this extract and what was quoted in Lecture X. (pp. 256, 7) from the Sermon on the Passion, as showing how our Reformers *identified* faith and works, not in idea, but in fact. The one Homily says, "It remaineth to show unto you how to apply Christ's death and passion to our comfort as a *medicine to our wounds*, . . . for as it profiteth a man nothing to have *salve*, unless it be well applied to the part afflicted," &c. The other speaks of alms as "a precious *medicine*, a profitable *remedy*," which we are to "use and apply," "*salves and remedies* to heal" our "sores and grievous diseases."

It must be observed, moreover, that though faith is the appointed means of pleading Christ's merits, and so of cleansing (as it were) works done in faith from their adhering imperfection, yet that after all those works, though mixed with evil, are good in themselves, as being the fruit of the Spirit. Hence, in the passage which follows what has been quoted, very slight mention is made of faith, and the grace of God is made all in



all, as "working in us both to will and to do," and "giving us power to get wealth<sup>1</sup>;" the contrast lying not between faith and works, but between God's doings and man's doings. Nay, even when the image of the tree and fruit is introduced, it is interpreted, of the *grace* of God the Holy Ghost in us, and of the *effects* in us of His gracious Indwelling.

"But here some one will say unto me, If alms-giving and our charitable works towards the poor, be able to *wash away sins*, to *reconcile us to God*, to *deliver us from the peril of damnation*, and *make us sons and heirs of God's kingdom*, then are Christ's merits defaced, and His blood shed in vain, then are we justified by works, and by our deeds may we merit heaven; then do we in vain believe that Christ died for to put away our sins and that He rose for our justification, as St. Paul teacheth." Now this is the very objection urged against our Divines, such as Bishop Wilson, for words far short of those admitted by the Homily as true. Let us observe how the writer answers it. "But ye shall understand, dearly beloved, that neither those places of Scripture before alleged, neither the doctrine of the Blessed Martyr Cyprian, neither *any other* godly and learned man," for instance, those excellent writers now so unworthily censured, "when they, in extolling the dignity, profit, fruit, and effect of virtuous and liberal alms, do say that it washeth away sins and bringeth us to the favour of God, do mean, that our work and charitable deed is the *original cause* of our acceptance before God, or that *for the dignity or worthiness thereof* our sins be washed away, and we purged and cleansed from all the spots of our iniquity; for that were indeed to deface Christ, and to defraud Him of His glory. But they mean this, and this is the understanding of these and such like sayings, that God of His mercy and especial favour towards them, whom He hath appointed to everlasting salvation, hath so offered His grace especially, and they have so received it fruitfully, that although

---

<sup>1</sup> Deut. viii. 18.

by reason of their sinful living outwardly, they seemed before to have been the children of wrath and perdition, yet now *the Spirit of God mightily working in them*, unto obedience to God's will and commandments, they declare by their outward deeds and life, in the showing of mercy and charity, (which cannot come but of the Spirit of God and His special grace,) that they are the undoubted children of God appointed to everlasting life.

. . . For as the good fruit is not the cause that the tree is good, but the tree must first be good before it can bring forth good fruit, so the good deeds of man are not the cause that maketh man good, but he is first made good by the Spirit and grace of God that effectually worketh in him, and afterward he bringeth forth good fruits. . . . As the true Christian man, in the thankfulness of his heart for the redemption of his soul, purchased by Christ's death, showeth kindly by the fruit of his faith his obedience to God, so the other, as a merchant with God, doth all for his own gain, thinketh to win heaven by the merit of his works, and so defaceth and obscureth the price of Christ's blood, who only wrought our purgation. The meaning then of these sayings in Scripture, 'alms deeds do wash away our sins,' and 'mercy to the poor doth blot out our offences,' is, that *we doing these things* according to God's will and our duty, *have* our sins indeed washed away and our offences blotted out, not for the *worthiness* of them, but by the grace of God which worketh all in all, and that *for the promise that God hath made to them that are obedient unto his commandments*, that He which is the Truth, might be justified in performing the truth due to His true promise." (This seems an allusion to a statement of St. Austin's.) "Alms deeds do wash away our sins, because God doth vouchsafe then to *repute us* as clean and pure, that is, justify, *when* we do them for His sake, and not because they deserve or merit our purging, or for that they have any such strength and virtue in themselves. . . . The godly do learn that when the Scriptures say, that by good and merciful works we are *reconciled to God's favour*, we are taught then to know what

Christ by His intercession and mediation obtaineth for us of His Father, *when we be obedient* to His will; yea, they learn in such manner of speaking, a comfortable argument of God's singular favour and love, that attributeth that unto us and to our doings, that He by His Spirit worketh in us, and through His grace procureth for us. . . . Thus they humble themselves and are exalted of God; they count themselves vile, and of God are counted pure and clean; they condemn themselves, and are justified of God; they think themselves unworthy of the earth, and of God are thought worthy of heaven."—Sermon of Alms-deeds, Part II.

To add passages to this most striking testimony would be unnecessary, were it not an object to show that our Formularies consistently put forth the doctrine contained in it. For instance, in the first Sermon on the Passion, justification is said to be gained through forgiveness of injuries and mutual forbearance: "Let us then be favourable one to another, and pray we one for another that we may be healed from all frailties of our life, the less to offend one the other; and that we may be of one mind and one spirit, agreeing together in brotherly love and concord, even like the dear children of God. *By these means shall we move God to be merciful to our sins*; yea, and we shall be hereby the more ready to receive our Saviour and Maker in His blessed Sacrament, to our everlasting comfort and health of soul." Again, soon afterwards: "Unless we forgive other, we shall never be forgiven of God. No, not all the prayers and good works of other can pacify God unto us, unless we be at peace, and at one with our neighbour. Not all our *deeds and good works can move God to forgive us our debts to Him, except we forgive to another.*" Now it is presumed the word "move," used in these passages, implies that forgiveness of injuries is an immediate means or instrument of our forgiveness at God's hand; not indeed mere forgiveness accorded from any motive, but forgiveness which is of faith.

Again, at the end of the Sermon of Charity. "If we thus

direct our life by Christian love and charity, *then* Christ doth promise and assure us, that He loveth us, that we be the children of our heavenly Father, *reconciled to His favour*, very members of Christ."

To the same purpose surely are such exhortations as the following from the Sermon on the Resurrection :—"Apply yourselves, good friends, to *live in Christ*, that Christ may *still* live in you, whose favour and assistance if ye have, then have ye everlasting life already within you, then can nothing hurt you." Godly and holy living was the *immediate tenure* of Christ's inward presence, or of justification in God's sight.

On turning to the Prayer Book, what first calls for remark is the collection of introductory Sentences prefixed to the Exhortation. It is quite evident that these Sentences are intended to proclaim God's forgiveness of sin, as a fit introduction to the Confession. They are a sort of gospel herald, inviting all who hear to come to Christ. Now is faith mentioned as *the* mean by which pardon and acceptance after sinning may be obtained? by a singular chance (so to speak) it is not mentioned in any one of them; most singular and observable indeed, considering the Sentences are the selection of the Reformers, who, if any men, were alive to the necessity of faith in order to justification. Nothing can show more clearly that while they considered it the only instrument of justification, they considered also that good works (of whatever kind) were in fact the coming to God, the realizing, the presence of faith. Certainly, the view of religion popular in this day, would have confined itself to such texts as are most impressively cited in the Communion Service <sup>1</sup>, instead of putting forth the profitableness of "turning away from the wickedness we have committed," of "acknowledging our transgressions," and of "a broken spirit." Contrition, confession, humiliation, deprecation, repentance, and amendment, are separately urged upon us, faith is omitted.

---

<sup>1</sup> John iii, &c.

In like manner in the Exhortation we are enjoined to confess our sins "with a *humble, lowly, penitent, and obedient* heart, to the end that we may obtain forgiveness of the same." Why are we not told to "come in faith, and to apprehend and appropriate the free gift?"

Again, in the Collect for Ash Wednesday, we pray God to "*create and make in us new and contrite hearts, that we worthily lamenting* our sins and acknowledging our wretchedness, may obtain *perfect remission and forgiveness.*" Are not renewal, contrition, and confession here represented as the *immediate* causes or instruments, on our part, of justification?

So again in the Visitation of the Sick, the directions given to the sick person in order to the forgiveness of his sins, are "accusing and condemning himself of his own faults," "believing the Articles of our Faith," "repenting of his sins," "being in charity with all the world," "forgiving all persons that have offended him," "asking forgiveness, if he have offended any other," "making amends for injuries and wrongs," and, if of ability, "being liberal to the poor." Faith as an act apprehending and appropriating Christ is not once mentioned, or the notice of it even approached.

Lastly, in the Communion Service, recovery of the state of justification is promised to those who "return to their Lord God with all contrition and meekness of heart, bewailing and lamenting their sinful life, acknowledging and confessing our offences, and seeking to bring forth worthy fruits of penance;" "if with a perfect and true heart we return to Him;" "if we come unto Him with faithful repentance, if we submit ourselves unto Him, and from henceforth walk in His ways; if we will take His easy yoke and light burden upon us, to follow Him in lowliness, patience, and charity, and be ordered by the governances of His Holy Spirit, seeking always His glory and serving Him duly in our vocation with thanksgiving; this if we do, Christ will deliver us from the curse of the Law." How different from the popular Protestant doctrine, which says, "If

you have sinned, go to Christ in faith, look upon Him who has borne the sins of the world, cast your burden upon Him, apprehend Him, apply His merits to your soul, believe you are justified, and you are justified without any thing else on your part."

## LECTURE XIII.

---

### ON PREACHING THE GOSPEL.

---

ROM. x. 3.

“They, being ignorant of God’s righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.”

It may be asked, What was the fault of the Jews in their use of their Law, which led them to reject Christ when He came? That Law was from God; they honoured it as such; they were told to adhere to it, and they did adhere; they thanked God for it; they thanked God for the power of obeying it; they thanked God for the electing grace which had given them in it a pledge of His favour above the rest of mankind. All this surely, it may be said, was right and praiseworthy; it was proceeding in the way of God’s commandments, and seemed to promise, that when His perfect truth was revealed, it would be obeyed as dutifully as what had hitherto been given. This

might have been expected; yet when Christ came, He was rejected.

We all know how to answer this question, viz. by explaining that the Jews considered their Law, not imperfect, as it was, but perfect; not as a means, but as the end. They rested in it, and though they nominally expected a Messiah, they did not in their thoughts place Him above the Law, or consider Him the Lord of the Law, but made their Law every thing, and "the Desire of all nations" nothing. He was the true mode of approaching God, the sole Justifier of the soul; they considered their Law to be such. And so, in the words of the text, "they, being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, did not submit themselves unto the righteousness of God." They imagined that they could be both justified and sanctified by the Law, whereas Christ was the end of the Law both for holiness and acceptance. Now it is a very common charge against the Ancient and Catholic view of the Gospel, that it throws us back into a Jewish state, and subjects us to the dominion of the Law. On the other hand, from various remarks made in the course of these Lectures, it may be seen that the modern system, whose very life and breath (as I may say) consist in the maintenance of this charge, is itself not altogether free from the error which it denounces. Rather, as I would maintain, it is deeply imbued with it, having fallen, after the usual manner of



self-appointed champions and reformers, into the evil which it professed to remedy. This, then, shall be our subject in this concluding Lecture, in which I shall suggest some remarks on the imputation of *legalism*, as it is called, wrongly urged against Catholic Truth, rightly urged against Protestant error; not that I propose to enter upon a formal discussion of it, which would carry us far away from our main subject.

1. It may be objected, then, against the Church Ancient and Catholic, that, as Judaism interposed the Mosaic Law between the soul and Christ, turning a means into an end, a resting-place into an abode, so it also obscures the sight and true worship of Him, and that, by insisting on Creeds, on Ceremonies, and on Works;—that by its Creeds it leads to Bigotry, by its Ceremonies to Formality, and by its doctrine concerning Works to Self-righteousness. Such is the charge.

Now here I most fully grant that those who in their thoughts substitute a Creed, or a Ritual, or external obedience for Christ, do resemble the Jews. Nay, I do not care to deny, what, however, I leave it for others to prove, that there are, and have been, Catholic Christians open to the charge of forgetting the “One Thing needful,” in their over anxiety about correct faith, devotional observances, or acts of piety and conscientiousness. But I will say this:—that on the face of the case, such an error is a great *inconsistency*; and no system can be

made answerable for consequences which flow from a neglect of itself. When, for instance, the Church bids us be accurate in what we hold concerning the Person of Christ, she is thereby declaring that Christ is the Object of our worship; when she bids us frequent His House, she implies that He is in it; when she says good works are acceptable, she means acceptable to Him. The Church has never laid it down that we are justified by Orthodoxy only, or by Baptism only, or by Works only; much less by some certain act or feeling of our minds only; and less still has she decided that to believe this was the one fundamental truth of religion. And if this be turned into a charge against her that, whereas there is One only Saviour invisible, she has made the visible means of salvation many, and so by their very multiplicity has hidden Him, I reply, that if this were a fair argument, it ought to tell against the Mosaic Law also, as if its divinely appointed ceremonies were to blame for the blindness of the Jews; but if the Jews themselves were in fault, and not their Law, so there is no antecedent objection against Catholic Christianity, (and such objections only have I here to consider,) for insisting on Baptism and Orthodoxy, and Works, and many things more, even though it has occasioned in individual cases forgetfulness of Him, on whom they depend. So much at first sight; now let us descend into particulars.

(1.) As to the doctrine of works leading to self-

righteousness, I pass it over here, though much might be said about it, both because I have incidently answered the charge in the foregoing Lectures, and in various Sermons, and because it is a mere theory, a mere phantom to frighten the mind from strict obedience, which a man will best refute for himself, by obeying, and trying whether he becomes self-righteous, except so far as all we are and all we do will be used as weapons against our souls by our spiritual enemy, unless we are on our guard. So I pass on.

(2.) Next, as to the Creeds of the Church; I grant that the Athanasian Creed certainly may be taken by careless readers to imply that orthodoxy is the ultimate end of religion; but surely it will seem otherwise on due consideration. For no one can deny, looking at it as a whole, that it is occupied in *glorifying* Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in declaring their infinite perfections; so much so that it has sometimes been considered what it really is in form, a Psalm or Hymn of Praise to the Blessed Trinity, rather than a Creed, as the *Te Deum* is. Nay, this is its characteristic, not only in its general structure, but in its direct enunciation of the Sacred Mysteries; which is put forth not as an end in itself, but evidently in order to glorify God in His incomprehensible majesty, and to warn us of the danger of thinking of Him in a chance way, and of speculating concerning Him without reverence. For instance, it begins by stating that the purpose of the

Catholic Faith is, not intellectual accuracy, but “that we *worship* One God in Trinity, and Trinity in Unity;” and ends its confession with a similar intimation, that “in all things, as is aforesaid, the Unity in Trinity, and the Trinity in Unity is to be *worshipped*.” And this agrees with what we know historically, that doctrinal statements on these high subjects are negative rather than positive; intended to forbid speculations, which are sure to spring up in the human mind, and to anticipate its attempts at systematic views by showing the ultimate abyss at which all rightly conducted inquiries arrive, not to tell us any thing definite and real, which we did not know before, or which is beyond the faith of the most unlearned. Or, again, they are safeguards, summing up in brief what the *whole* doctrine, as contained in Scripture, implies, and thus directing us as landmarks in speaking and teaching on the subject. Thus, for instance, the statement “Not by conversion of the Godhead into the flesh, but by taking of the Manhood into God,” is somewhat similar in its use to the formula of “justification by faith only,” as explained by Melancthon and adopted by our Church; except that the latter expresses a principle, and the former a fact. However, they both are framed by the mind’s reflecting, in the latter case on Christ’s work, the former on His Person. By resting on our mere knowledge of the one or the other, and making the statement itself our end, we become bigots;

and not less in the latter case than in the former. As, then, the doctrine of justification, as held by our Church, is not answerable for such abuse of it, neither, on the other hand, is the statement in the Athanasian Creed. Each may be used as a touchstone or measure of doctrine; neither has a direct and immediate reference on practice.

(3.) Further, the Ordinances of the Church are accused of detaining the worshipper from Him towards whom they profess to lead, and of making him *formal* and *superstitious*. Now it must be borne in mind, that, whether our doctrine is *superstitious* or not, depends on the circumstance whether it is true or not. If it be not true, it becomes *ipso facto* superstitious. To ascribe regeneration to the Word and Water in Baptism, is either a Scripture duty, or a virtual breach of the second commandment.

Superstition is the substitution of human for divine means of approaching God. Before He has spoken, it is religious to approach Him in what seems the most acceptable way; but the same principle which leads a pious mind to devise ordinances, when none are given, will lead it, under a revelation, to adhere to what are given. He who made the creature, gives it its uses; He can make bread of stones, or bid the fig-tree wither. Things are what He makes them, and we must not "make to ourselves," lest we make idols. Thus it was a superstition in the Jews to reject the Mosaic rites

under the Law, and a superstition to observe them under the Gospel; a superstition to sacrifice to Baal then, and to keep the Sabbath now. It was a superstition to worship graven images, no superstition to "rise up and worship" when "the cloudy pillar descended<sup>1</sup>." It is a superstition in the Christian Church to give a virtue to penance or to indulgences which Christ has not given; it is a superstition to pay honours to images, which Christ has not commanded. Superstition, then, keeps the mind from Christ, because it originates in a plain act of self-will: it is not properly superstition unless it does. And hence it is but one form of presumptuousness or profaneness, as the history of the Jews shows us. It is superstitious to ascribe power to the creature where God has not given it; and profane to deny it, where He has. If, then, to look for regeneration through Baptism be superstitious, supposing God has not given it, as it is, so if He has, it is profane not to look for it. The question lies in this alternative of profaneness or superstition. If the Catholic doctrine be true, it is not superstitious; if the Anti-catholic be not true, it is profane. This is the real state of the case, and can be settled only by an appeal to the matter of fact, whether the doctrine is or is not revealed. Hence it is plainly nugatory to urge against us that our ordinances *are* superstitious, for this is (what is

<sup>1</sup> Exod. xxxiii. 10.

called) "to beg the question." The only real definition of a superstitious ordinance is that it is one to which God has given no power; so the objection when drawn out will really stand thus:—"The Catholic ordinances are mere human inventions, *because* they are superstitious; and they are superstitious, *because* they are not appointed by God." When they are proved to be not divine, we will grant, without the intermediate step, that they are human.

But it may be said that we are open to the charge of *formality* at least, whatever difficulties may beset the question of superstition; that any system of religion which so multiplies and diversifies its visible means of grace, as thereby to deny the direct communion of God with the soul, effectually shuts out the thought of Him; that it makes the worshipper practically dependent on things sensible, and introduces a Pantheistic spirit into the Gospel. Whatever be the force of this antecedent objection in a question of *fact*, such as that concerning the contents of a Revelation, let those answer to whom it applies. If there be a Church system any where, which makes itself co-extensive with the Gospel Dispensation, which professes to be the mirror of all that passes before the Divine Mind, and the organ of His diversified dealings with the mind of man, which keeps pace with what is infinite and eternal, and exhausts the Abyss of grace, such a system is certainly open to the objection. And as far as any, such as the Roman, has approximated

to such an assumption in practice, so far it is concerned to answer it. But how does it apply to our theology, which on the face of it has never so represented the Church's office, or claimed for her so vast a delegation of power? It is often said of us by way of reproach, that we leave Dissenters to the "uncovenanted mercies of God;" nay, in a sense, we leave ourselves; there is not one of us but has exceeded by transgressions its revealed provisions, and finds himself in consequence thrown upon those infinite resources of Divine Love which are stored in Christ, but have not been drawn out into form in the appointments of the Gospel. How can they be said to place the Church instead of Christ, who say that there is no other ordained method on earth for the absolute pardon of sin but Baptism; and that Baptism cannot be repeated? Surely, while English divines deny the existence of any Sacrament like Baptism after Baptism, whatever objections are brought against them, they cannot be accused of substituting the Church for Christ.

But it may be said that, the real objection to Forms lies, not in their number, be they many or few, nor in their being unauthorized, though this of course is an aggravation, but in this, that they *are* forms; that by a form is meant a standing rule, a permanent ordinance; and that it is this which keeps the soul from God, whatever degree of favour be ascribed to the observance of it. Whatever



Baptism be supposed to effect, if it effects any thing, if it is necessary for any blessing, if it be of continual obligation in the Church, so far it throws a shadow, not light, upon her.

All we mean by one thing being the cause of another, it may be said, is its being its invariable antecedent. As we call the Sun the cause of summer, because its presence is the one necessary condition of summer, with as good a reason may Baptism be called the cause of regeneration, if it must always precede regeneration. And if even educated persons are found to consider the Sun the cause of light, and forget God, much more practically will the imagination of the multitude substitute Baptism for regeneration. Accordingly this, it may be argued, is the great advantage of considering preaching the ordinary means of regeneration and conversion, that it obviates the possibility of an invariable condition, and the formality consequent thereupon. Preaching cannot be called a form, because it is not of a permanent and uniform character. Preachers rise and fall, come and go; no two are alike; no two speak in the same way; they allow us the liberty of judging for ourselves concerning them, and depending on our own convictions. They do but stimulate and feed our mind,—they do not oppress it with a yoke of bondage. They are amenable to their flocks; and are honoured, not for their office's sake, but for their usefulness; whereas the minis-

ters and rites of the Church are idols, worse than pagan, because the worshipper cannot break them at his will.

Now it is plain that such a line of reasoning would prove, did not our senses convince us otherwise, that the Sun could not be constituted as the fountain of light and heat. Were the arguments for considering Baptism an ordained means of grace ever so insufficient, the danger of its superstitious use would be no proof against its being so ordained, while the miserable idolatries are on record which have been directed towards the Sun. Moreover, this argument from the abuse of a thing against the use, comes with a bad grace from an age, in which, more than in any other, the powers of nature are trusted to the neglect of Divine Providence and Governance. If the doctrines of the Church are chargeable with having led to reliance on the creature, are not the useful arts much more? Does not Baptism, even when most mistaken and abused, remind us more of heaven, than do those physical sciences, and mechanical and other inventions, which are now regarded as almost the long sought *summum bonum* of the species? If Catholic teaching has led to superstition, has not the new philosophy led to profaneness?

This objection is still more unreasonable when applied to the visible instruments of religion, because neither under the Law nor under the Gospel have they been, strictly speaking, of an abiding

nature, not permanent in actual and material form, but only in the abstract ordinance. The means, through which the gifts are conveyed, are transitory; as our Lord's appearances after His resurrection. His glory in the cloud, at which the people "rose up and worshipped," was but now and then according to His will; the manna might not be kept till the morning; again of the Paschal Lamb nothing was to remain till the morning; and the Brazen Serpent, which for a moment they were bid "look upon," that they might live, became an idol on being kept, and was broken by Hezekiah because honoured "*unto those days,*" and therefore, as was necessarily implied, not as a mere symbol, but for its own sake, and with idolatrous worship. In like manner our ordinances are transitory; and the idolatry imputed to the Church of Rome mainly consists in its making them permanent. It "reserves, carries about, and lifts up," the Holy Elements in the Eucharist; it changes the sign of the Cross into a material form; and it detains the relics of the Saints from their appointed resting-place, as if to possess itself of those immortal and invisible elements which are one day to rise again unto glory.

Moreover, it may fairly be questioned whether religion does not necessarily imply the belief in such sensible tokens of God's favour, as the Sacraments are accounted by the Church. Religion is of a personal nature, and implies the acknowledgment of a particular Providence, of a God speaking,

not merely to the world at large, but to this person or that, to me and not to another. The Sacred Volume is a common possession, and speaks to one man as much and as little as his neighbour. Our nature requires something special; and if we refuse what has been given, we shall be sure to adopt what has not been. We shall set up calves at Dan and Bethel, if we give up the true Temple and the Apostolic Ministry. This we see fulfilled before our eyes in many ways; those who will not receive Baptism as the token of God's election, have recourse to certain supposed experiences of it in their hearts. This is the idolatry of a refined age, in which the superstitions of barbarous times displease, from their grossness. Men congratulate themselves on their emancipation from forms and their enlightened worship, when they are but in the straight course to a worse captivity, and are exchanging dependence on the creature for self-sufficiency.

2. And thus we are led to the consideration of the opposite side of the question before us, whether at this day it is not rather the accusing party itself than the Church which is accused, to which the charge of Judaism properly attaches. At first sight a suggestion of this kind will look like a refinement, or as only a sharp retort urged in controversy, but not to be seriously dwelt on. But I wish it dwelt on most seriously, and if rejected, rejected after being dwelt on. I observe then, that what the Jews felt concerning their Law, is exactly what

many upholders of the tenet of "faith only," feel concerning what they consider faith; that they substitute faith for Christ; that they so regard it, that instead of being the way to Him, it is in the way; that they make it a something to rest in; nay, that they alter the meaning of the word, as the Jews altered the meaning of the word Law; in short, that, under the pretence of light and liberty, they have brought into the Gospel the narrow, minute, technical, nay, I will say carnal and hollow system of the Pharisees. Let me explain what I mean.

I would say this then:—that a system of doctrine has risen up during the last three centuries, in which faith or spiritual-mindedness is contemplated and rested on as the end of religion instead of Christ. I do not mean to say that Christ is not mentioned as the Author of all good, but that stress is laid rather on the believing than on the Object of belief, on the comfort and persuasiveness of the doctrine rather than on the doctrine itself. And in this way religion is made to consist in contemplating ourselves, instead of Christ; not simply in looking to Christ, but in *seeing* that we look to Christ, not in His Divinity and Atonement, but in our conversion and faith in them.

Of course nothing is more natural or suitable than for a Christian to describe and dwell on the difference between one who believes and one who does not believe. The fault here spoken of is the putting the state of a believer as a *more prominent*

subject of the Gospel than the nature, attributes, and work of Him who has given it,—the insisting on it as a special point for the consideration of those who have as yet lived without seriousness. When men are to be exhorted to newness of life, the true object to be put before them, as I conceive, is “Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever;” the true Gospel preaching is to enlarge on the person, natures, attributes, offices, and work of Him who once regenerated them, and is now ready to pardon; to dwell upon His recorded words and deeds on earth; to declare reverently and adoringly His mysterious greatness as the Only-begotten Son, One with the Father, yet distinct from Him; of Him, yet not apart from Him; eternal, yet begotten; a Son, yet not a creature; and to combine and contrast His attributes and relations to us as God and man, as our Mediator, Saviour, Sanctifier, and Judge. The true preaching of the Gospel is to preach Christ. But the fashion of the day has been, instead of this, to attempt to convert by insisting on conversion; to exhort men to be converted; to tell them to be sure they look at Christ, instead of simply holding up Christ; to tell them to have faith, rather than to supply its Object; to lead them to work up their minds, instead of impressing on them the thought of Him who can savingly work in them; to bid them be sure their faith is justifying, that it is not dead, formal, self-righteous, or merely moral, instead of glorifying Him, whose

image fully delineated, destroys deadness, formality, and self-righteousness; to rely on words, vehemence, eloquence, and the like, rather than to aim at conveying the one great idea whether in words or not. And thus faith and (what is called) spiritual-mindedness are dwelt on as *ends* and obstruct the view of Christ, just as the Law was perverted by the Jews.

I will take two passages from writers of the last century, out of a hundred which might be selected, in illustration of this over-earnest dwelling upon the state of our minds, with a view to effect in us real and spiritual conversion.

The following is an extract from a letter addressed to a person, ignorant of the truth, and whom the writer was endeavouring to enlighten. After having mentioned the doctrine of the Trinity, he says, "I believe, that, whatever *notions* a person may take up from education or system, no one ever did, or ever will, *feel* himself and own himself to be such a lost, miserable, hateful sinner, unless he be powerfully and supernaturally convinced by the Spirit of God." Doubtless; but the question is whether we should simply preach the doctrine of the Trinity, trusting God will rescue it from being a mere notion, and will bring it home with power to the mind, or whether we are more likely to prevent its being a notion by cautioning men against its being a notion. To proceed: "There is, when God pleases, a *certain light* thrown into the soul, which differs not merely in degree, but in kind,

*toto genere*, from any thing that can be effected or produced by moral suasion or argument. But, (to take in another of your queries,) the Holy Spirit teaches or reveals no new truths, either of doctrine or precept, but only enables us to *understand* what is already revealed in the Scripture." Most true; but to tell a person so is not the way to convert him. We do not affect people by *telling* them to weep or laugh; let us preach Christ, and leave the effect to God, to prosper it or not. He continues: "Here a *change* takes place; the person that was spiritually blind begins to *see*. The sinner's character, as described in the Word of God, *he finds* to be a description of himself; that he is afar off, a stranger, a rebel; that he has hitherto lived in vain. Now he begins to see the necessity of an Atonement, an Advocate, a Shepherd, a Comforter; he can no more trust to his own wisdom, strength, and goodness; but accounting all his former gain but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ, he renounces every other refuge, and ventures his all upon the person, work, and promises of the Redeemer. . . . Without this awakened state of mind, a divine, reputed orthodox, will blunder wretchedly even in defending his own opinions<sup>1</sup>." Now that no effect follows

<sup>1</sup> Newton's Cardiphonia, Letter II. to Mr. S. Again: "As you tell me you *never remember a time* when you were not conscious before God of great unworthiness and intervals of earnest endeavours to serve Him, though not with the same success, yet something in the same way as at present; this is but saying in other words, *you even remember a time when old things passed away, and all things became new.*"



upon such representations I am very far from saying; experience shows it does. But for the most part it will be produced by sympathy, and will consist in imitation. Men will feel this and that, because they are told to feel it, because they think they ought to feel, because others say they feel it; not spontaneously, as the consequence of the objects presented to them. And hence the absence of nature, composure, unobtrusiveness, healthy and unstudied feeling, variety and ease of language, among those who are thus converted, even when that conversion is sincere. Convulsions are in this view the only real manifestation of spiritual life and strength.

The other passage which I proposed to quote, runs as follows:—“*Beware of mistaking mere external works for true holiness. Holiness is seated in the heart; every act receives its goodness from the principles from which it flows, and the end to which it is directed. The external works of the generally esteemed, devout, decent, and charitable, are usually as far from being acts of real holiness, as any of the enormities of those who proclaim their shame as avowed children of disobedience: they proceed from as unrenewed hearts, from as unchristian tempers, and are directed to as unsanctified ends.*” Still supposing it, the question is whether one tends ever so little to escape the danger of having counterfeit holiness instead of true by this sort of warning. Just the reverse; the more you fasten men’s thoughts on themselves, the more you lead them to

unconscious show, pretence, and duplicity. To proceed: "You may attend your Church twice on Sunday; you may go on week-days too. You may frequent the Sacrament. You may say prayer in your house and alone. You may read the Psalms and Lessons for the day. You may be 'no extortioner or unjust.' You may be in many things unlike other men; neither given to swear, nor drink, nor lewdness, nor extravagance. You may be a tender parent, a careful master, and what the world calls an honest man; yea, you may withal be very liberal to the poor; be regarded in the world as a pattern of piety and charity, and respected as one of the best sort of people in it; and yet with all this, be the very character, which, 'though highly esteemed amongst men, is an abomination in the sight of God.'

"For if you have never seen" (not your Saviour, but) "*your 'desperately wicked heart,'* been united to Christ" (by His love and grace? no, but) "*by aith, renounced your own righteousness to be found in Him, and receive from Him newness,*" (receive! as if the great thing was not His giving but our taking!) "if you *know not experimentally what is meant* by 'fellowship with the Father and His Son Jesus Christ;'" (observe, not "if you *have* not fellowship," but "if you *know* not you have;" and this self-seeking, as it may be truly called, is named *experimental* religion;) "if your *devotion* hath not been inspired 'by faith which worketh by love;' if your *worship* hath not been in 'spirit and truth,' from a

real *sense* of your wants, and an earnest *desire* and *expectation* of receiving from Him ‘in whom all fulness dwells;’ if this hath not been your case, your devotions have been unmeaning ceremony, your book, not your heart, hath spoken; and instead of the fervent effectual prayer of the righteous man, your babblings have been no better than the sounding brass and tinkling cymbal<sup>1</sup>.” Poor miserable captives, to whom such doctrine is preached as the Gospel! What! is *this* the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free, and wherein we stand, the home of our own thoughts, the region of our own sensations, the province of self, a monotonous confession of what we are by nature, not what Christ is in us, and a resting at best not on His love towards us, but in our faith towards Him! This is nothing but a specious idolatry; a man thus minded does not simply think of God when he prays to Him, but is observing whether he feels properly or not; does not believe and obey, but thinks it enough to be conscious that he is, as he thinks, warm and spiritual; does not contemplate the grace of the Blessed Eucharist, the Body and Blood of His Saviour Christ, except (O shameful and fearful error!) except as a quality of his own mind<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Haweis’ Sermons, p. 221—3.

<sup>2</sup> A remarkable contrast between our Church’s and this false view of religion is afforded in the respective modes of treating a death-bed in the Visitation of the Sick, and a popular modern work, the Dairyman’s Daughter. The latter runs thus:—“ My dear Friend, do you not *FEEL that you are supported?* The

Even Luther, in his zeal against the undue estimation of works in his own day, teaches his followers

Lord deals very gently with me, she replied.—Are not His promises *very precious to you*? They are all yea and amen in Christ Jesus.—Are you in much bodily pain? So little, that I almost forget it.—How good the Lord is! *And how unworthy am I. . . .* Do you *experience any doubts or temptations* on the subject of your eternal safety? No, sir; the Lord deals very gently with me, and gives me peace.—What are your *views* of the dark valley of death, now that you are passing through it? *It is not dark,*” &c. &c. Now, if it be said that such questions and answers are not only in their place innocent, but natural and beautiful, I answer, that that is not the point here, but this; viz. they are evidently intended, whatever their merits, as a pattern of *what death-bed examinations should be*. Such is the Visitation of the Sick in the 19th century. Now let us listen to the nervous and stern tone of the 16th. In the Prayer Book the Minister is instructed to say to the person visited,—“Forasmuch as after this life there is *an account* to be given unto the *Righteous Judge*, &c. . . . I require you to examine yourself and your estate, both towards God and man; so that, &c. Therefore I shall rehearse to you *the Articles of our Faith, that you may know whether you do believe* as a Christian man should, or no. Dost thou believe in God the Father Almighty,” &c. . . . After mentioning the Objects of faith, the Service proceeds to speak of the Works; “Then shall the Minister examine whether he *repent* him truly of his sins, and be in *charity* with all the world; exhorting him to *forgive* from the bottom of his heart all persons who have offended him; and if he hath offended any other to *ask them forgiveness*; and where he hath done injury or wrong to any man, that he *make amends* to the utmost of his power. . . . The minister should not omit earnestly to move such sick persons as are of ability, to be *liberal to the poor*.” Then the sick man is to be “moved to make

a lesson here. Commenting on the text, "Yet *not I*, but Christ liveth in me," he uses the following energetic words:—" <sup>1</sup> Here," says he, "the Apostle clearly shows how he lives; and he teaches what Christian righteousness is, viz. that with which Christ lives in us, not that which is in our own person. And so when we treat of Christian righteousness, we must altogether put away our person. . . . If I look at myself only, Christ being excluded, *it is over with me*. For then immediately the thought comes across me, 'Christ is in heaven, thou upon earth, how wilt thou now come

a special *confession* of his sins, if he feel his conscience troubled with any weighty matter." Creeds and Works! let but Rites be added, and then we shall have all three offences, as men now speak, Bigotry, Superstition, and Self-righteousness; and in truth the third stumbling block does follow. "After which Confession, the Priest shall *absolve* him, if he humbly and heartily desire it, after this sort; 'Our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath left power to His Church to absolve all sinners who truly repent and believe in Him,' &c." Such is the contrast between the "dreamy talk" of modern Protestantism, and "holy fear's stern glow" in the Church Catholic.

<sup>1</sup> *Ibi ostendit clare, quomodo vivat. Et docet, quæ sit justitia Christiana, ea scilicet, qua Christus in nobis vivit, non quæ est in persona nostra. Itaque cum disputandum est de justitia Christiana, prorsus abjicienda est persona. Nam si in persona hæreo, vel de ea dico, fit ex persona velim, nolim, operarius Legi subjectus. Sed hic oportet Christum et conscientiam meam fieri unum corpus, ita ut in conspectu meo nihil maneat nisi Christus crucifixus et resuscitatus. Si vero in me tantum intueor, excluso Christo, actum est de me, &c. In Gal. ii. 20.*

to Him? I will live spiritually, and do as the Law demands, and so as to enter into life. Here *reflecting on myself* and considering what is the quality of my mind, or what it *ought to be*, also what I ought to do, *I let go Christ from my eyes*, who is my sole righteousness and life. . . . We should accustom ourselves, *turning from ourselves*, in such distress of conscience, from the Law and works, *which only force us to reflect on ourselves*, simply to turn our eyes to the Brazen Serpent, Christ fixed to the Cross, in whom fixing our earnest gaze, we may be sure that He is our righteousness and life." What Luther wrote against the conscience-stricken Romanist, applies still more forcibly to the unduly triumphant Protestant; for surely it is better to lose Christ and mourn, than to let Him go and think it gain.

To the same purpose is a passage from the Homily on Salvation:—"Our faith in Christ, as it were, saith unto us thus: It is not I that take away your sins, but it is Christ only, *and to Him only I send you for that purpose, forsaking therein all your good virtues, words, thoughts, and works, and only putting your trust in Christ* <sup>1</sup>."

And now if we inquire what is the difference between this view, which our Church really holds, and that which pretends to be hers, it will be found to be this; that the Church considers the doctrine

<sup>1</sup> Sermon of Salvation, part ii. fin.

of justification by faith only to be a *principle*, and the religion of the day takes it as a *rule of conduct*. Principles are great truths or laws which embody in them the character of a system, enable us to estimate it, and indirectly guide us in practice. For instance; "all is of grace," is a great principle of the Gospel. So are the following:—"we conquer by suffering,"—"the Saints of God are hidden,"—"obedience is of the spirit not of the letter,"—"the blood of the Martyrs is the seed of the Church,"—"to gain happiness we must not seek it." It is a characteristic of such statements of principles to be short, pointed, strong, and often somewhat paradoxical in appearance. Such, for example, is the political maxim, which has a clear and true meaning, but in form is startling, "The King can do no wrong;" or in physics, that "nature abhors a vacuum." They are laws or exhibitions of general truths; and not directly practical. I mean, a man will be sure to get into difficulty or error if he attempts to use them as guides in matters of conduct and duty. They mean nothing, or something wide of the truth, taken as literal directions. They are like the Sun in the heavens, too high, too distant, to find your path by, though indirectly and secondarily useful even for that.

Proverbs, again, are of the same nature; we recognise their truth in the course of life, but we do not walk by them. They come after us, not go before. They confirm, they do not explore for us.

They are reflections upon human conduct, not guides for it.

Such are principles: rules, on the other hand, are adapted for immediate practice; they aim at utility, and are directed and moulded according to the end proposed, not by correctness of reasoning or analysis. We follow blindly; content, so that we arrive where we propose, whether we know how or not. We take them literally and without reasoning, and act upon them. Thus, if I ask my way, I shall be told, perhaps, to go first right forward, then to take a bend, then to watch for a hill or a river. There is no room for philosophy here; it were out of place; all is practical.

Now justification by faith only is a principle, not a rule of conduct; and the popular way of viewing it is as a rule. This is where men go wrong. They think that the *way* by which they must set out to practise religion is, to *believe*, as something independent of every other duty; as something which can exist in the mind by itself, and from which all other holy exercises follow;—to believe, and thus forthwith they will be justified; which will as surely mislead them as the great principle that “the Saints are hidden” would mislead such as took it for a rule, and thought by hiding themselves from the world to become Saints. They who *are* justified, are justified by *faith*; but having faith is not the *way* to be justified, as little as being hidden is the way to be a Saint.



The doctrine of justifying faith is a summary of the whole process of salvation, from first to last; a sort of philosophical analysis of the Gospel, a contemplation of it as a whole, rather than as a practical direction. If it must be taken as a practical direction, and I do not deny that there is a sense in which it may, then we must word it, not, "justification through faith," but, "justification by Christ." Thus interpreted, the rule it gives is, "go to Christ;" but, taken in the letter, it seems to say merely, "get *faith*; become spiritual; see that you are not mere moralists, mere formalists, see that you feel. If you do not feel, Christ will profit you nothing: you must have a spiritual taste; you must see yourself to be a sinner; you must accept, apprehend, appropriate the gift; you must understand and acknowledge that Christ is the 'pearl of great price;' you must be conscious of a change wrought in you; for the most part going through the successive stages of darkness, trouble, error, light, and comfort." Thus the poor and sorrowful soul, instead of being led at once to the source of all good, is taught to make much of the conflict of truth and falsehood within it as the pledge of God's love, and to picture to itself, delineate, and seek out faith, as a sort of passive quality which sits amid the ruins of the soul, and keeps up what may be called a silent protest, or indulges a pensive meditation over its misery. And, indeed, faith thus regarded cannot do more; for while it acts, not to lead the soul to Christ, but

to detain it from Him, how can the soul but remain a prisoner, in that legal or natural state described by the Apostle in the seventh of Romans,—a passage of Scripture which the upholders of this doctrine confess, nay boast they feel to be peculiarly their own. Such is their first error, and a second obviously follows. True faith is what may be called colourless, like air or water; it is but the medium through which the soul sees Christ; and the soul as little really rests upon it and contemplates it, as the eye can see the air. When, then, men are bent on holding it (as it were) in their hands, curiously inspecting, analyzing, and so aiming at it, they are obliged to colour and thicken it, that it may be seen and touched. That is, they substituted for it, something or other, a feeling, notion, sentiment, conviction, or act of reason, which they may hang over, and doat upon. They rather aim at experiences (as they are called) within them, than at Him that is without them. They are led to enlarge upon the signs of conversion, the variations of their feelings, their aspirations and longings, and to tell all this to others;—to tell others how they fear, and hope, and sin, and rejoice, and renounce themselves, and rest in Christ only; how conscious they are that they are but “filthy rags,” and all is of grace, till in fact they have little time left them to guard against what they are condemning, and to exercise what they seem to themselves to be so full of. Now men in a battle are brief-spoken; they realize

their situation and are intent upon it. And men who are acted upon by news good or bad, or sights beautiful or fearful, admire, rejoice, weep, or are pained, but are moved spontaneously, not with a direct consciousness of their emotion. Men of elevated minds are not their own historians and panegyrists. So it is with faith and other Christian graces. Bystanders see our minds; but our minds, if healthy, see but the objects which possess them. As God's grace elicits our faith, so His holiness stirs our fear, and His glory kindles our love. Others may say of us "here is faith," and "there is conscientiousness," and "there is love," but we can only say, "this is God's grace," and "that is His holiness," and "that is His glory."

And this being the difference between true faith and self-contemplation, no wonder that where the thought of self obscures the thought of God, prayer and praise languish, and preaching flourishes. Divine worship is simply contemplating our Maker, Redeemer, Sanctifier, and Judge; preaching, conversing, making speeches, arguing, reading, and writing about religion, tend to make us forget Him in ourselves. The Ancients worshipped; they went out of their own minds into the Infinite Temple which was around them. They saw Christ in the Gospels, in the Creed, in the Sacraments and other Rites; in the visible structure and ornaments of His House, in the Altar, and in the Cross; and, not content with giving the service of their eyes, they gave Him

their voices, their bodies, and their time, gave up their rest by night and their leisure by day, all that could evidence the offering of their hearts to Him. Theirs was not a service once a week, or some one day, now and then, painfully, as if ambitiously and lavishly, given to thanksgiving or humiliation; not some extraordinary address to the throne of grace, offered by one for many, when friends met, with much point and impressiveness, and as much like an exhortation, and as little like a prayer, as might be; but every day and every portion of the day was begun and sanctified with devotion. Consider those Seven Services of the Holy Church Catholic in her best ages, which, without encroaching upon her children's duties towards this world, secured them in their duties to the world unseen. Unwavering, unflagging, not urged by fits and starts, not heralding forth their feelings, but resolutely, simply, perseveringly, day after day, Sunday and week day, fast day and festival, week by week, season by season, year by year, in youth and in age, through a life, thirty years, forty years, fifty years, in prelude of the everlasting chant before the Throne,—so they went on, “continuing *instant* in prayer,” after the pattern of Psalmists and Apostles, in the day with David, in the night with Paul and Silas, winter and summer, in heat and in cold, in peace and in danger, in a prison or in a cathedral, in the dark, in the day-break, at sun-rising, in the forenoon, at noon, in the afternoon, at even-

tide, and on going to rest, still they had Christ before them; His thought in their minds, His emblems in their eye, His name in their mouths, His service in their postures, magnifying Him, and calling on all that lives to magnify Him, joining with Angels in heaven and Saints in Paradise to bless and praise Him for ever and ever. O great and noble system, not of the Jews who rested in their rites and privileges, not of Christians who are taken up with their own feelings, and who describe what they should exhibit, but of the true Saints of God, the undefiled and virgin souls who follow the Lamb whithersoever He goeth! Such is the difference between those whom Christ praises and those whom He condemns or warns. The Pharisee recounted the signs of God's mercy upon and in him; the Publican simply looked to God. The young Ruler boasted of his correct life, but the penitent woman anointed Jesus' feet and kissed them. Nay, holy Martha herself spoke of her "much service;" while Mary waited on Him for the "one thing needful." The one thought of themselves; the others thought of Christ. To look at Christ is to be justified by faith; to think of being justified by faith is to look from Christ and to fall from grace. He who worships Christ and works for Him, is acting that doctrine which another does but enunciate; his worship and his works are acts of faith, and avail to his salvation, because he does not do them *as* availing.

But I must end a train of thought, which, left to itself would run on into a whole work. And in doing so I make one remark, which is perhaps the great moral of the history of Protestantism. Luther found in the Church great corruptions countenanced by its highest authorities; he felt them; but instead of meeting them with divine weapons, he used one of his own. He adopted a doctrine original, specious, fascinating, persuasive, powerful against Rome, and wonderfully adapted, as if prophetically, to the times which were to follow. He found Christians in bondage to their works and observances; he released them by his doctrine of faith; and he left them in bondage to their feelings. He weaned them from seeking assurance of salvation in standing ordinances, by teaching that a personal knowledge of it was promised to every one who believed. For outward signs of grace he substituted inward; for reverence towards the Church contemplation of self. And thus, whereas he himself held the proper efficacy of the Sacraments, he has led others to disbelieve it; whereas he preached against reliance on oneself, he introduced it in a more subtle shape; whereas he professed to make the written word all in all, he sacrificed it in its length and breadth, to the doctrine which he had wrested from a few texts. This is what comes of fighting God's battles in our own way, of extending truths beyond their measure, of anxiety after a teaching more compact, clear, and spiritual, than

the Creed of the Apostles. Thus the Jews were more careful of their Law than God who gave it; thus Saul saved the cattle he was bid destroy, "to sacrifice to the Lord:" thus Sennacherib charged Hezekiah with "taking away the altars and high places" of his God; thus Judas was concerned at the waste of the ointment which might have been given to the poor. In these cases bad men professed to be more zealous for God's honour, more devotional, or more charitable than the servants of God; and in the same sense Protestants would be more spiritual. Let us be sure things are going wrong with us, when we see duties more clearly, and do them more entirely than they are set before us in revelation.

## APPENDIX.

### *On the formal cause of Justification.*

THE formal cause of a thing is generally explained to be that which constitutes it what it is ; thus the soul may be said to be that which changes the dust of the earth into an organized and living body ; or, again, heat may be considered the cause of a hot substance being hot, or that in which its state as hot, consists. Comparing the formal cause to other so-called causes or antecedents, it is the last in the series by which a thing is brought to be, or the ultimate state of the process which intervenes between the will of the originator and its performance ; at least this will convey a notion of what is meant, sufficient for the matter in hand. Thus according to the Council of Trent, justification, the work of God, is brought into effect through a succession of the following causes : the God of mercy the *efficient* cause, Christ offered on the Cross the *meritorious*, Baptism the *instrumental*, and the principle of renewal in righteousness thereby communicated the *formal* ; upon which immediately follows justification. Or again, Faith is considered successively as a disposing cause, the instrumental, or the formal cause of justification, by various parties, thus being brought nearer and nearer to that of which it is the cause, till it (as it were) falls into and coincides with it. Hence the form is that, between which and the thing in question nothing can be interposed



in our ideas ; and accordingly it is sometimes really distinct from it, sometimes not. Thus, to take one of the instances given, if the renovation in righteousness which follows Baptism, or the *justitia Dei qua nos justos facit*, as the Council speaks, be considered as a principle, as I have expressed it, it is the formal cause of our renewed state itself as well as of justification ; and is or is not really distinct from that renewed state, according as we believe it to be a mere abstraction of the mind contemplating it, or a definite divine gift residing in the soul. Again : heat, the formal cause of a hot iron, is really distinct from and antecedent to its being hot, according as we view caloric as an idea or a substance. When the formal cause is considered as a mere abstraction of the mind, then it nearly coincides with the logical *differentia, proprium, or inseparable accident*. Thus whiteness is at once the form and the *accident* of a white wall ; and animality is the *form* and the *generic difference* of man distinguished from a vegetable.

The ordinary meaning of the word *form* serves to illustrate this scientific use of it. What discriminates a body from every thing else is its shape ; which is the development of that of which it is composed, into and unto a certain determinate lineament and structure. The Form then is such a disposition or result constituting a thing to be what it is. For instance, the matter of a science is its objective truth, its form that truth when it has become subjective, or *knowledge*, which is a sort of determinate embodying of what was till then unappropriated.

2. This being the meaning of this term employed, it is plain that to determine what is the formal cause of our justification is as important an undertaking as any one in the controversy, whatever difficulties may attend it, whatever chance of verbal disputes, (as there is almost the certainty,) and whatever danger, in consequence, of persons finding

themselves on contrary sides, who are in reality like-minded. The question, What it is in us upon which justification comes, or in which it consists, may be thrown into the following more practical shape: What is it which God will look on the last day and accept us in? what will be the immediate antecedent in our souls before the words "Come, ye blessed." Supposing a religious man, unversed in controversy, to be asked this question, the answer would at once rise on the tongue, which is suggested by the passage of Scripture referred to, viz. the recognition of our *good works* on the part of God: "Come, ye blessed, *for* I was an hungred," &c. Next on consideration he might correct his answer so far as to say that since works are not good except done in a certain way and persevered in to the end, it is not the mere having done certain works, but the presence of a renewed state of mind developing itself in works, which is that upon which acceptance or justification comes. Further; after a little more thought, recollecting the parable of the Pharisee and Publican, he might add, that of course he did not mean to say that our works or our inward state was such as to be able in itself to stand the scrutiny of a just and Holy God, but that whatever was accepted of ours must be accepted for the sake of Christ's merits and under the covenant of mercy. Lastly, recollecting the language of Hezekiah and Nehemiah, and St. Paul's, about "the rich storing up for themselves a good *foundation*," and about his own "good fight," and St. Luke's, that Zacharias and his wife were "righteous *before God*," and Zacharias's prophecy about Gospel "holiness and righteousness *before Him*," and St. Paul's appeal to his *conscience*, he would add further, by way of caution, that Christ's merits did not supersede the necessity of our doing our part.

2. Here suppose two disputants to interpose, they would

perhaps each claim the speaker as on his own side. The one would urge that he had decided that the formal cause of justification was either our good works, or our inward holiness, as the case was viewed. The other, that on the contrary he had spoken of the necessity of Christ's merits coming between us and God's sentence; these merits then, after all, were the immediate antecedent of justification, that upon and in which justification consisted, or its formal cause. The former would rejoin that those merits were not the *immediate antecedent* of justification, but the presupposed ground-work of justification all along, without which there would be no covenant, no works, no reward at all; not the last step before justification, but the first step towards it<sup>1</sup>; not the formal cause, but the meritorious. And here they would join issue; whether Christ's merits, which are the original cause of our holiness and works, are to be considered as the medium, (as it may be called,) of the covenant *in which* we act, or the *proximate* cause of our entering into life<sup>2</sup>. Such is the question on which some remarks are now to be attempted, and which has been viewed in a variety of ways; such as the following:—(1) It has been said that we are justified directly upon our holiness and works wrought in us *through* Christ's merits by the Spirit; or (2) upon our holiness and works *under* the covenant of Christ's merits, or, in other words, sanctified and completed by Christ's merits; or (3) that our faith is mercifully ap-

<sup>1</sup> Vide Vasquez Disp. 222.

<sup>2</sup> Quando formalem causam quaerimus justificationis nostrae, id quaerimus *propter quod* peccator in gratiam Dei recipitur, *per quod immediate* Deo gratus et ad aeternam vitam acceptus stat. Daven. *Just. Hab.* 22. Statuendum est hanc justitiam sive hoc meritum Christi non intervenire solummodo in prima nostra justificatione, sed *semper objici* divino judicio, ita ut *ejus intuitu* non modo recipiamur in gratiam ab initio, sed stemus in gratia ac perducamur ad finem gratiae, nempe ad gloriam.—*Ibid.* 28.

pointed as the substitute for perfect holiness, and thus is the interposing and acceptable principle between us and God; or (4) that Christ's merits and righteousness are imputed as ours, and become the immediate cause of our justification, superseding every thing else in the eye of our Judge. Of these the first is the high Roman view; the last the high Protestant; and the two intermediate are different forms of what is commonly considered the High Church view among ourselves, and very nearly resemble Bucer's, among the Protestants, and that of Pighius, Mus-sus, and many others among Romanists.

4. Indeed it is no point of faith with the Romanists to take the view which I have called Roman, but still I shall so call it, as holding the place among them which our so called high Church doctrine does among us, that is, as being the generally received, orthodox, and legitimate exposition of their formularies. Romanists consider then that that on which justification at once follows, in which it consists, or its formal cause, is inherent righteousness; (whether habitual or of works, which is an open question;) and they argue that it is so, on the plain ground that no interposition of mercy between it and justification is required, and therefore none is made. If justification comes upon inherent righteousness at all, there is no reason, they say, why it should not come immediately upon it. If it be replied to them that nothing we can do, though proceeding from the grace of Christ, is such as to stand the scrutiny of God's judgment; so that the most perfect human righteousness cannot possibly proceed to justification as its legitimate result, but even though real, and though not infected with sin, yet as being but inchoate and incomplete, needs to be pardoned, they deny it, and argue as follows: Nothing exposes us to God's wrath but sin, and a state of sin is incompatible with the existence at all of grace in the soul.

To deny this, they say, is almost a contradiction in terms ; hence a habit of grace *occupies* the soul, to the exclusion, not of infirmities, imperfections, and venial sins<sup>1</sup>, but of every thing which interferes with a state of reconciliation with God ; it may grow towards perfection, and it tends to destroy all that remains of an earthly nature in the soul, but by entering into the soul it expels all that is hateful to God. The renewed soul is *in* a state of favour, else it would not be renewed ; Christ's merits have been applied when it was renewed, and their virtue lasts while it is renewed. If a man commits a mortal sin, he is at once thrown out of this state both of favour and renewal ; and if he so died would die out of justification ; but, while he is in it, he is by the very force of the words only in the commission of such sins as are not mortal and do not incur God's wrath and damnation. And in this the Romanists differ from Luther, who taught that no sin throws the soul out of a state of grace but unbelief, that is, distrust. It appears then that they hold two things—that the presence of grace implies the absence of mortal sin ; next, that it is a divine gift bringing with it the property of a continual acceptableness and so recommending the soul to God's favour, so as to anticipate the necessity of any superadded pardon.

Nay, some writers speak of the presence of the Holy Ghost Himself, who is in the righteous, as being the formal cause of their inherent righteousness, who of course may easily be understood as continually applying to them Christ's merits, while He continually sustains their spiritual life. But whether we consider the presence of the Holy Spirit, or grace as the form of righteousness, or grace as the *justitia* which is mentioned as the form in the Decree, or even if grace be taken to be the same habit as love

<sup>1</sup> About venial sins vid. Vasquez Disp. 222, ii. 17.

viewed differently, yet we have an inward gift immediately from God, doing that for the soul, which, whatever be its actual proficiency in holiness, it must need, washing it in Christ's blood, and so presenting it to God blameless and glorious without spot or wrinkle or blemish. This doctrine seems expressed in the Canon of the Council of Milevis, (A.D. 416.) in the time of St. Austin: "Placuit, ut quicumque dixerit gratiam Dei, in qua justificamur per Jesum Christum Dominum nostrum, ad solam remissionem peccatorum valere quæ jam commissa sunt, non etiam ad adjutorium ut non committantur, anathema sit." To the same effect, when Bucer in the Ratisbon Conference objects to his opponent, as saying, "Homines non eo justos quia non eis imputentur, sed quia legem Dei impleant," the Roman writer of the Acts observes, "Sed hoc non ita posuerat Malvenda; sed quia gratiam habent *delentem peccata*, et vires suggerentem ad implendam legem."

5. The real distinction already alluded to as drawn between the divinely imparted principle of righteousness, even after being imparted, and our minds, is allowed in the Church of Rome and held by Romanists, both before the Council of Trent and after. Lombard indeed even held that the indwelling of the Holy Spirit is a substitute for the *habit* of love, &c. (Vasquez, Disp. 203, c. 1. Bellarm. de Gratia, i. 13.) Again, St. Thomas contends that the *gratia* justificans is not the same as the habit of love; the latter belonging to the will, and the former to the substance of the soul. In which opinion he is followed by Caietan, Conradus, Soto, and others. Bonaventura assents, so far as to consider there is a real distinction between them. (Vasquez, Disp. 198, c. 2.) This alleged distinction was a subject of dispute at the Council of Trent between the Franciscans and Dominicans, (Sarpi, Hist. lib. ii. p. 187.) on all which accounts it was left unsettled by the Fathers there

assembled. "Observandum præterea est," says Pallavicino, Hist. 8. 14. § 2, "cum e Scholasticis aliqui putarent, hominem reddi justum per gratiam a charitate distinctam, alii per ipsam charitatem, præter quam non insit alia gratia quæ justum faciat, *adhibitam data opera fuisse a Patribus vocem nunc gratiæ nunc charitatis et interdum etiam utramque*, vel in Canone undecimo, ut se abstinerent ab ea declaratione, duæ res an una eademque res illæ forent." Indeed it may be obviously argued that unless the habits of grace and of love are distinct, infants cannot be justified. Vasquez and Bellarmin indeed, though they treat it as an open question, consider that *grace* and *love* are one and the same, which would resolve the inward justifying principle into a quality of our minds ; but even then arises the question in reserve, whether that love does not after all arise from the presence of the Holy Spirit, who, therefore, whatever be said, and nothing of ours, will be the true justifier ; and among moderns, Petavius, no mean authority, does not scruple to call the Holy Ghost the formal cause of our righteousness.

This is so remarkable as to justify the insertion of several passages out of the many which might be quoted from his *De Trinitate*, lib. viii. Sic igitur cum fidelibus ac justis impertiri communicarique Spiritus Sanctus legitur, non ipsamet illius persona tribui, sed ejus efficientia videri potest, idque communis fere sensus habet eorum, qui in Patrum veterum lectione minus exercitati sunt. Quos qui attente pervestigare voluerit, intelliget occultum quendam et inusitatum missionis communicationisque modum apud illos celebrari, quo Spiritus Ille Divinus in justorum sese animos insinuans cum illis copulatur ; eumque non accidentarium, ut ita dicam esse, hoc est, qualitate duntaxat illa cœlesti ac divina perfici ; quam in pectora nostra diffundit idem cœlestium donorum largitor ac procreator

Spiritus, sed οὐσιώδη, hoc est substantialem; ita ut substantia ipsa Spiritus Sancti nobiscum jungatur, nosque sanctos et *justos*, ac Dei denique *filios efficiat*, 4. § 5. Omnino itaque per occultam quandam *infusionem substantiæ suæ* justificare homines Spiritum Sanctum Didymus arbitratus est. Eadem et apud Paschasium et Bernardum leges de participatione illa substantiæ Spiritus Sancti, *qua* boni vel sapientes *efficimur*, hoc est *justi et sancti*. Ibid. § 15. Evidens est ex eorum [Patrum] decretis, *justitiæ* ac sanctitatis *statum* non creata re ulla vel qualitate, sed ipsa Spiritus Sancti substantia, *tanquam principali forma, in nobis perfici*, 5 § 1. Ac valde sunt illa consentanea Cyrilli, aliorumque Patrum sententiis, . . . quæ Spiritum Sanctum *ποιότητα* velut quandam divinitatis esse demonstrant, aut *formam* quæ *ποιούσ τινας* reddit eos in quibus inest. Ibid. § 15. Relegantur omnia veterum Patrum testimonia, quæ superius exposita sunt, et quod iis præstantius est Scripturæ loca illa recenseantur, quæ cum *justis* conjungi vel in iis *habitare*, aut Deum simpliciter, aut privatim Filium, docent, inveniamus eorum pleraque testari per Spiritum Sanctum hoc fieri, velut *proximam causam* et ut ita dixerim *formalem*, 6. § 8. It would seem then as if there were *two* formal causes of justification admitted by Romanists, love or inherent righteousness, and grace or the presence of the Holy Spirit indwelling. Nor does Vasquez take an objection to the notion of thus viewing the subject; on the contrary, he says, "Neque enim incommodum aliquod est, constituere *duas formas*, per quas homo justificari possit apud Deum, nempe duos habitus." Disp. 198. c. 3. Indeed, it is just as intelligible and reasonable, as if the form of bodily life were said to be either a certain organization, or the presence of an animating spirit.

This admission of a double form in justification is worth noting, as it points towards that doctrine which I shall



presently notice as truer and more Catholic than the high Roman; nor does the argument urged by Vasquez against it, that where one is enough, it is superfluous to suppose two, tell for much, on the hypothesis that the gift of grace is really the form, and inherent righteousness but improperly so.

6. But to return: such then is on the part of the extreme Romanists, the resolution of the question *how* inherent righteousness stands the scrutiny of divine holiness and constitutes our acceptance; they answer that it consists in an inward divine gift, which has the power of applying, or springs from the application of Christ's merits, and so effects or presupposes the cleansing of all sin in us. Protestants, on the other hand, are accustomed to consider that the immediate antecedent to justification is an act of pardon from without upon the soul to be justified, which act, in consequence, is considered its formal cause. Now there are many difficulties attending this theory, but its strength in argument with Romanists lies in the authorities which can be brought against them from among their own friends. Some of these shall be mentioned, before we consider the theory itself. A remarkable testimony, for instance, of this kind is St. Austin's, who thus speaks in his *De Civitate Dei*: "*Ipsa nostra justitia, quamvis vera sit propter veri boni fidem ad quem refertur, tamen tanta est in hac vita, ut potius peccatorum remissione constet quam perfectione virtutum. Testis est oratio totius Civitatis Dei, quæ peregrinatur in terris, per omnia quippe membra sua clamat ad Deum, Dimitte nobis debita nostra.*"—xix. 27. And St. Jerome: "*Tunc ergo justi sumus, quando nos peccatores fatemur; justitia nostra non ex proprio merito, sed ex Dei consistit misericordia.*"—contra Pelag. i. (vol. ii. p. 179). Against such statements it seems hardly in point to urge passages from the Fathers on the other side which speak of inherent

righteousness as justifying; the sole question being whether, *granting this*, it justifies after being sprinkled with the blood of Christ, which passages such as the above seem clearly to imply. So again St. Ambrose: "Non gloriabor quia justus sum, sed quia redemptus sum; gloriabor, non quia vacuus peccatis sum, sed quia mihi remissa sunt peccata; non quia profui, neque quia profuit mihi quisquam, sed quia pro me Advocatus apud Patrem Christus est, sed quia pro me Christi sanguis effusus est."—de Jacob et vit. beat. i. 6. And Pope Gregory: "Justus Advocatus noster justos nos defendet in judicio, quia nosmet ipsos et cognoscimus et accusamus injustos. Non ergo in fletibus, non in actibus nostris, sed in Advocati nostri allegatione confidamus."—In Ezek. lib. i. hom. 7. *fn.* And so St. Bernard on his sick bed, as Hooker after him: "Fateor, non sum dignus ego, nec propriis possum meritis regnum obtinere cœlorum; cæterum duplici jure illud obtinens Dominus meus, hæreditate scilicet Patris et *merito passionis*, altero ipse contentus, alterum mihi donat; *ex cujus domo jure illud mihi vendicans non confundor.*" Vide S. Bern. i. 12. col. 1084. These passages are not inconsistent indeed, still they differ in tone from the Roman view of the doctrine. Lists of similar passages will be found in Gerhard de Just. §§ 8, 213, &c.; de Leg. § 189; Field of the Church, iii. Append. ch. 2; J. White's Way to the Church, Digress. 35; Davenant de Just. Habit. c. 29. Of these I shall only cite in addition the testimony of Bellarmine himself often quoted in the controversy, and remarkable because he advocates the high Romanist view. After saying that the Catholic Church goes along a middle way, teaching that our *chief* hope and confidence must be placed in God, yet *some* in our services, he proves from Scripture and the Fathers three propositions;—that the confidence of the Saints in God arises not from faith alone, but from good

works ; that when our services are *proved* really to deserve the name, we may put some confidence in them, *so that we beware of pride* ; and thirdly, which is the statement in question, “ *Propter incertitudinem propriæ justitiæ et periculum inanis gloriæ, tutissimum est fiduciam totam in sola Dei misericordia et benignitate reponere.*” And then he explains this by saying that he means, not that we should not pursue good works with all our might, not that they are not a true ground of confidence, are not real righteousness, or unable to sustain God’s judgment, but that it is *safer* in a manner to *forget* what we have done, and to look solely at God’s mercy, because no one can know, except by revelation, whether or not he has done any good works, or whether he shall persevere, and because the contemplation of good works, even if he could know of them, is dangerous, as being elating.—Vide de Just. v. 7.

7. On this subject may be consulted to advantage Le Blanc’s Theological Theses, *de Rel. bon. op.* part. 2, Thes. 1, who carefully discusses the views of the Roman doctors concerning the value of good works, and shows that, in spite of their doctrine *ex condigno*, many of them hold one or other of the following opinions distinct from that of Vasquez which has been chiefly spoken of above ;—that the merit of the works of the regenerate depends on God’s covenant, even regarded as works of the Spirit ; that these works are not accepted for the reward of eternal life, except as *sprinkled with the blood of Christ* ; that the word merit is not meant to apply in the standard of justice but of *mercy* ; and that when the justice of God is spoken of in this relation His faithfulness is meant, or *conformity to the dictates of His wisdom*. Moreover he says they all confess, that the meritorious works in question are not such in themselves, but as done by the *persons of the regenerate*, who are God’s sons, not servants, and that good works are

not meritorious of life, as bad works of death. In a word they do not consider our holiness or good works a cause in the *way of nature*, but in the *mind* and dealings of a gracious God; at the same time, as is hardly necessary to add, the Roman doctors often use language most grating and revolting to our ears, and (as we cannot but think) very perilous to those who acquiesce in it.

To these authorities must be added the testimony of many of the schoolmen, who distinctly state as general doctrine, what Bellarmine considered only to be safer to the individual, that the regenerate cannot trust in the view of God's judgments on any thing good in them, or any good works of theirs. Vasquez makes mention of these writers and of others of later date, in the following very observable words, which have often been quoted: "Non possum non mirari antiquos scholasticos, quos hactenus memoravi, quod de justitia nobis inhærente ita abjecte senserint, ut veram ei adscribere *formidaverint* rationem justitiæ et sanctitatis inhærentis quæ suapte natura Deo necessario placeat; recentiores vero theologos multo magis miratus sum, quod post præclaram Concilii Tridentini definitionem, quam inferius explicabo, tam *exilem* justitiam inhærentem justis concesserint, ut ex se non habeat virtutem tergendæ maculas peccatorum, nec eas purgare valeat, nisi favore et condonatione Dei relaxentur."—Disput. 204, c. 2, p. 469.

8. Such are the confessions, or, it may be said, concessions of Romanists towards the doctrine of Protestants on the subject of justification. But far from being content with them, Luther, Calvin, and their followers, have maintained that nothing is really gained, while good works or holiness are in *any* respect made the formal or constituting cause of justification; and then their difficulty begins, for they forthwith have to *construct* a doctrine of their own, whereas they are only Protestants, and by the force of the term seem to disclaim

any positive theology. The question is, what is the formal cause of justification:—now let us grant that our divinely imparted sanctity and works are not the immediate antecedent to our receiving the sentence of justification; that justification does not depend on, or consist in any thing we are or can do; that Christ's merits must ever interpose, intercede between us and God, and so preclude our righteousness from being the formal cause; the question recurs, what *is* the formal cause of our justification? and on this question we shall find in the writings of Protestants great diversity of opinion and little satisfaction. Some say that faith is the formal cause, some forgiveness of sins, some the imputation of Christ's righteousness, and some that there is no formal cause at all.

9. Perhaps the best choice that can be made out of these answers, is to say it is faith. Such was the answer originally given by the Lutherans, but they retracted it. And such is the answer virtually given by Bishop Bull and many others of our divines who have chosen to express themselves in what may be called the *calculus* of Protestantism. By faith, according to Bishop Bull, is meant *fides formata charitate et operibus*, or the obedience which is of faith; a view which one is glad to find was admitted in the deliberations of the Council of Trent<sup>1</sup>, and differs from the view I have called properly Roman, in this, that by calling inherent righteousness by the name of *faith*, it implies that that righteousness can only be accepted in Christ, and is unable to stand God's judgment unless sprinkled with His Atoning grace. But, returning to Luther, I observe that he too sometimes speaks of faith as our *formalis justitia*. *Ubi ergo vera fiducia cordis est, ibi adest Christus ipsa nebula et fide. Eaque est formalis justitia, propter quam*

<sup>1</sup> Pallavic. Hist. viii. 4, 3.

homo justificatur, non propter charitatem, ut sophistæ loquuntur. In Gal. ii. 16. Hoc [tribuere Deo gloriam] ratio non facit, sed fides ea consummat divinitatem, et, ut ita dicam, creatrix est divinitatis, non in substantia Dei, sed in nobis. . . . Ideoque illam gloriam posse tribuere Deo, est sapientia sapientiarum, *justitia justitiarum*, religio religionum, et sacrificium sacrificiorum. Ex hoc intelligi potest, quanta *justitia* sit fides, et per antithesin, quantum peccatum incredulitas. In Gal. iii. 6. Calvin says the same; by way of showing that works are not a cause of salvation, he observes that of the four received kinds of causes, "Efficientem. . . vitæ æternæ nobis comparandæ causam ubique Scriptura prædicat Patris cœlestis misericordiam et gratuitam erga nos dilectionem; materialem vero Christum cum sua obedientia, per quam nobis justitiam acquisivit; *formalem* vel *instrumentalem* quam esse dicemus nisi fidem?" Instit. iii. 14. § 17. This notion however seems to have been soon given up, and the *apprehensive* notion of faith substituted. Gerhard de Justif. § 163, argues that faith cannot be the formal cause of justification: "cum justificatio sit actio Dei;" which is to miss the question, (vide above, Lecture IV. p. 104,) and says, §§ 197, 201, that when so called by Lutherans, nothing more is meant than that faith is the means of apprehending Christ, who is our righteousness in God's sight.

10. This latter doctrine, which is Luther's, is brought down by Gerhard from *Christus fide apprehensus est justitia nostra*, § 163, to *Christi justitia*, next *Christi obedientiæ imputatio*, then *justitiæ per Christum partæ imputatio*, and lastly to *remissio peccatorum*, §§ 16. 197. 198. he maintaining that *imputatio justitiæ per Christum partæ* is identical with *remissio peccatorum*, § 199, and the one formal cause of justification. Calvin, on the other hand, assenting to the doctrine that the *imputatio justitiæ*,

or non-imputatio or remissio peccatorum, is the formal cause, (Instit. iii. 11, §§ 2. 4; Antidot. p. 323; Eccles. Reform. Rat. p. 368; Chamier de Justif. xxii. 13. § 5.) and that sanctification is not, but a "necessary accident," present in justification *comitanter* not *formaliter*,—a distinction difficult to master since a form need not be intrinsic,—(vide Calvin, Antid. p. 324; Davenant de Just. Hab. fin.) determines with more candour that *Christus*, or the obedientia Christi, is the *matter* of justification<sup>1</sup>. (Vide passage above quoted, and Instit. iii. 11. § 7.; Chamier de Justif. xxi. 1, § 19.) But what he gains thereby in truth, he loses in the argument; for whereas the formal cause must be from its nature intimately connected (whether accidentally or essentially) with that of which it is the cause, such a solution of the question gives up the notion of such a connexion altogether, as substituting with Gerhard for the passive sense of justification that active sense which belongs to God. (Vide Chamier, loc. cit.) To tell us that *justifying* consists in God's pardoning sin, does not help us one step towards determining what it really is to be *justified*; whereas the phrases "*Christus justitia nostra*," "*Christus in cordibus inhabitans*," &c. of the Lutherans are better adapted to create a *φαντασία* of some real and intimate characteristic, and thus, granting nothing more, to break the force of an opponent's argument.

The Lutherans then argue that a form need not be any thing essential or internal; that the form, for instance, of a *sunny bank* is the sun's shining, the form of *news* lies in him to whom it is news; moreover that love, the form, as their opponents say, of justifying faith, is extrinsic only.

<sup>1</sup> It is remarkable that Davenant animadverts on Bonaventura's making the merits of Christ the matter of justification, which he says at once throws us upon inherent righteousness as the form.—*De Just. Hab.* ch. 28, fin.

Vasquez grants this, (Disput. 202. c. 3.) but argues that still there is always some real connexion between a thing and such extrinsic form; for instance, it is part of the mystery of the Incarnation that our Lord's human nature is infinitely holy, the Divine Nature being its extrinsic form; here the union between the two natures is *personal*; what then is that real connexion between Christ and the justified, whatever be its precise nature, which will allow us to call Him the form of our righteousness? The Lutherans make answer that *faith* is such a connexion; to which Vasquez replies by asking whether a man is called rich who by faith apprehends riches, or noble who so apprehends nobility? What is meant in short when it is said that an act of our minds changes our *real* state in God's sight? Gerhard answers, (in controversy with Bellarmine,) § 238, that it is a mystery; a sufficient account, if his school kept to it, instead of going on to explain how it was, and turning the justifying power of faith into a weapon against all mysteries, such as the Sacraments. Further, Bellarmine goes on to urge, (de Just. ii. 7.) that even though the formal cause be extrinsic, that where there is an intrinsic also, it is more *properly* the form, (for instance, it is more exact to say that fluidity was the form of melting wax than its exposure to the fire;) that a negro dressed in white would still be called a black man, and that a sinner to whom the righteousness of Christ is but imputed, has for his truer form the sin which is in him, not the perfection which is counted to him; (and, in like manner, if he is really made righteous by inherence, whether infection be left or not, that inherent righteousness is more properly the form of his justification than a mere imputed righteousness which is without him;) whereas, as to the case of justifying faith it may be argued, that no other form can be assigned but an external one, namely love, whatever be the form of faith as such, and that love



far from being separated from faith, is united with it by the closest and most real of all connections, being spoken of as existing in one and the same soul. To this Gerhard answers, that the reason why the justified sinner is said to be in a state of righteousness, because of what is external to him, rather than of sin from what is internal, is that he is not really a sinner in the same sense in which he was before; for sin in the regenerate has lost its formal part, which is guilt, and has only its matter remaining, and even that is under process of mortification. Further: he protests against the notion that the Protestant doctrine of imputation is nominal, shadowy, and putative. Davenant makes a similar complaint; yet desirous as one may be to be fair to the theory, and by no means including the individual reception of it, (as by Davenant himself) in the censure, it is difficult to speak of it in itself in any other terms. His words are these:—"Imputatio non fictionem cogitationis humanæ denotat, sed *efficacissimam Dei ordinationem et validissimam rei donationem*. Si Bellarminus nolit advertere quid intersit inter fictionem et donationem justitiæ Christi, dignus est qui coram tenendo illo tribunali sistatur, non alia justitia indutus quam sua inhærente."—c. 34. This surely is unfair, as well as severe; a gift or a possession is of two kinds, personal, and for use and enjoyment; gold or jewels put into one's hands is the former, and landed property is the latter. Davenant means that the justitia Christi is ours in the latter sense. He says, c. 28, fin., Christi justitia imputata nihil aliud est quam Christi justitia applicata et donata nobis *ad spirituales aliquem effectum producendum*. He does not regard it at all as a personal possession; and Calvin grants as much in considering the formal cause of justification, *not* the justitia Christi, but remission of sins, that is, the spiritual *consequences* of His righteousness. Bellarmine then assumes no more than

Calvin grants ; that we are *said* to be or *named* as having Christ's righteousness in order to have the fruits of that righteousness. Only he goes on to argue that such a mere nominal and not real gift, or in the first sense of the word, a gift not personal, cannot be called a formal cause. Yet Davenant dispenses very different justice to his acute opponent and his clearheaded and candid Master. While he uses language which one would wish to forget, because Bellarmine says that the imputation which is by faith, by the very force of the terms used, cannot be a personal characteristic of the soul, yet when Calvin says that Christ's righteousness is but the matter, not the form of justification, and only is applied to us in its effects, in the remission of sins, he says, " ut itaque *seponamus* philosophicas speculationes de natura causæ formalis," &c. Yet he is just beginning a dissertation of eight chapters upon it. The subject may be treated in a philosophical, or a common sense way ; but not taken up and put down in one or the other at pleasure. All this, as it seems to me, *ambiguity*, is to be imputed not to Bishop Davenant, whose work is full of noble passages, but to his system.

11. Another answer still more explicit than Calvin's, is that there is no formal cause of justification at all. Such is the final evolution of the Protestant theory, which beginning in the bold, nay correct language of Luther, that Christ Himself is the form of our justification, is gradually attenuated till the very notion of a form vanishes. This is the ground taken by those of our writers who are not Calvinists, yet retain partially the language of Protestantism. Jackson plainly puts forward this view in the following words:—"To demand of us what is the formal cause of justification, by which our sins are formally remitted, is, as if we should ask one of our young pupils, what were Latin for *manus*. Justification *taken* (as we do) *for remission of sins*, not by inherent righteousness, or

ought within us immediately incompatible with them, but *by the external merits of Christ*, is a form or entity as simple as any formal cause can be, and simple or uncompounded entities can neither have formal causes, or ought in proportion answering to them. Wherefore, as I said, it is either the folly or knavery of our adversaries to demand a formal cause of their justification, that deny themselves to be formally just in the sight of God." Book iv. ch. 7. init. Yet surely, with deference to so great a writer, if a justified state, or as he expresses it, a state of remission of sins by the external merits of Christ, consist in any thing, if he who has it differs from him who has it not, that in which it consists, that in which he differs, is a kind of formal cause; and he would be the last to deny that there are such characteristics attaching to a person justified. Yet from a fear of the Roman doctrine of merit, necessary probably at the time they wrote, and from a principle of maintaining, as far as might be, what they had received, some of our most revered divines have virtually denied with Jackson that there is any formal cause of justification; that is, they have avoided the question<sup>1</sup>. Thus Hooker, in a note on the Christian Letter, which asks, "Tell us whether you think that not faith alone, but faith, hope, and love, be the *formal cause* of our righteousness," answers, "Is faith then the formal cause of justification? and faith alone a cause in this kind? who hath taught you this doctrine?" but he does not tell us what the formal cause is. Eccles. Pol. lib. i. n. 58. Ed. 1836. Again, Bull, Taylor, and others who hold the doctrine of *fides formata charitate*, and Barrow, Tillotson, Wake, and a number of supporters of the same doctrine, yet do not, as far as I can

<sup>1</sup> Romanists are equally perplexed to determine the matter in Penance; the Council of Trent calls contrition, &c. the "*quasi materia*;" just as Davenant calls Christ's righteousness *instar causæ formalis*. c. 28. p. 369.

discover, venture to speak of justificatio formata fide, or justification by inherent righteousness, though by calling faith, or faith and obedience, the *condition* of justification, they call it the form virtually. Bull's language is so remarkable as to require citation. Causam justificationis formalem constituit [Fieldus] in remissione peccatorum et acceptatione ad salutem, non (ut D. Tullius) in justitiæ Christi imputatione. Nimirum intellexerat . . . justitiam Christi, quam prius . . . statuerat . . . meritoriam, non potuisse simul statui causam ejusdem formalem sine spissa absurditate adeoque manifesta contradictione. Nam causa meritoria est in genere efficientis, quæ est causa tantum externa, causa vero formalis interna est, &c. Apol. pro Harm. § 5. n. 11. Does this great divine hold that forgiveness is not the formal cause, or that it is internal? for he does not clearly say. Grabe, in *Harm.* b. 1. § 8, and Wells, *Covenants*, p. 2. ch. 2, *fin.*, do not scruple to call faith the formal cause.

12. The reluctance, which writers like those just mentioned show, from the prudence necessary for their times, becomes in all who are imbued with the proper Protestant theory, a feeling of zeal against a view which though existing in Popery is not false, unless exclusively held. They go a step further yet than has been described, and maintain not simply that there is no formal cause of justification, but that any one who says there is, is thereby assigning not a formal but a meritorious cause. Christ is acknowledged on all hands to be the sole meritorious cause of our justification; but the question is not, who is the Author or Agent, or other cause of it more or less subordinate, but simply what justification consists in, what immediately constitutes us righteous in God's sight. This question had in corrupt times been abused to the neglect of God's grace and Christ's merits, and to an idolatrous reliance on the crea-

ture, just as the doctrine that life consists in certain physical conditions, or the brain is the organ of thought, or the system of gravitation, may be perverted to the denial of God's creative and overruling power, or of the immateriality of the soul. Going into the opposite extreme, Protestants, when asked what it is which constitutes us righteous before God, not only refuse to answer explicitly, but assume the offensive; and when any one does venture to answer, accuse him of substituting the merit of works for the true Source of all acceptance and grace. Whenever one speaks of conditions, they explain it of merits; whenever one says, that the pure in heart shall see God, they answer that contrariwise, none are justified but those who are drawn by God's grace; and when one says that only the obedient shall be saved, they cry out that the doctrine of justification by faith only is the *articulus stantis vel cadentis Ecclesiæ*.

Such are some of the difficulties of the Protestant doctrine on this point; in suggesting which, if I have ventured to differ from some of our standard writers, it has been on a point not of faith, and in which they differ from each other; and if I have here or elsewhere used "freedom of speech" concerning Luther and Calvin, I will observe that those who spoke as they did of all who went before them, have no claim on the reverence of those who come after <sup>1</sup>.

13. To sum up what has been said:—the form into which we cast the original question was this, are our holiness

<sup>1</sup> Luther, on the text, "Behold I Paul say unto you," &c. Gal. v. 2. says, *Is locus terribile fulmen est contra totum regnum Papæ. Nam omnes sacerdotes, monachi, eremitæ, &c. (de optimis loquor) non Christo, quem summa injuria et blasphemia fecerunt iratum judicem, accusatorem, et damnatorem, sed suis operibus, justitiis, votis, et meritis confisi sunt. As to Calvin's arrogance, even against the Nicene Fathers, it needs no proof. Vid. in Valent. Gentil. p. 780. col. 2.*

and works done in Christ accepted or not without a fresh imputation upon them of Christ's merits? do the persons of Christians or do Christ's merits come next upon the act of God justifying them? The Romanist answers, Christians are justified in their holiness and works without any fresh pardon, and explains himself to mean, not that Christ's merits are not imputed, but that either they have been imputed once for all on the original justification, or that their continual imputation accompanies that inward gift of grace by which Christians are holy and do good works. The Protestant maintains that we are saved merely by that imputation, because even granting our holiness and works were in themselves good, which both Lutherans and Calvinists deny altogether even of the fruit of the Spirit, yet that after all they would be but inchoate and incomplete.

Now in the case of those who say that the fruit of the Spirit in us is in no degree good, and that we have no inherent righteousness at all, this difference is not verbal; the one party say that we are justified entirely by what is without us, because there is nothing within us which can justify; the other by what God plants within us, completed by His merciful imputation. But those who even though admitting the infection of sin to remain in the regenerate, deny that it is a mortal matter, or "deserves God's wrath and damnation;" or even if so, yet that it may be through God's grace subdued, seem to have no irreconcilable difference on this point with the Romanists. And this has ever been virtually and practically the prevalent doctrine in the English Church; nay, Le Blanc, in his *Theses Theologicæ*, maintains that Protestants generally have no difference with Romanists on this subject. "Quum mentem suam distinctius explicant [Scholæ Romanæ Doctores] in eundem plane sensum cum Theologis Reformatis incidunt." De Justit. inhær. 27. But however this may be, at least

English divines teach that our holiness and works done in the Spirit are something towards salvation, but not enough ; or that we are justified by obedience under the Covenant of mercy, or by obedience sprinkled with or presented in the Atoning Sacrifice. According to them then we are saved in Christ's righteousness, yet not without our own ; or considering Christ's righteousness as a formal cause, by two contemporaneous formal causes, by a righteousness, meritorious on Christ's part, inchoate on ours.

Now it happens that this doctrine, which must not be confused with the Roman doctrine of two successive justification, appears to have been held by Bucer as distinct from the other Reformers ; it is also the doctrine of the Canons of Cologne in their Antididagma of 1544 ; it was held by Pighius, Seripando, and others, at the Council of Trent ; and we have already heard the Confession of Vasquez, that it was virtually held by many schoolmen and divines of his Church, both in ancient and later times. In this then I conceive to lie the unity of Catholic doctrine on the subject of justification, that we are saved by Christ's imputed righteousness, and by our own inchoate righteousness at once.

14. First let us hear the Antididagma of Cologne, which was a considerable document at the time it appeared. It was drawn up by the Clergy of that See against Herman their Archbishop, who with Bucer and Melanchthon, was meditating a reform of his Church. (Vid. Sleidan. Hist. Reform. xv.) It cannot then be accused of a Protestant leaning. It speaks as follows :

“Justificamur a Deo *justitia duplici, tanquam per causas formales et essentielles*. Quarum una et prior est *consummata Christi justitia* ; non quidem quomodo extra nos in ipso est, sed sicut et quando eadem nobis (dum tamen fide apprehenditur) ad justitiam imputatur. Hæc ipsa ita nobis

imputata justitia Christi, præcipua est et summa justificationis nostræ causa, cui principaliter inniti et fidere debeamus. Aliter vero *justificamur formaliter per justitiam inhærentem*; quæ remissione peccatorum simul cum renovatione Spiritus sancti et diffusionem charitatis in corda nostra, secundum mensuram fidei uniuscujusque nobis donatur, infunditur, et fit propria; atque ita per fructus spiritus exercetur, efficiturque in nobis propria quædam justitia qua afficiamur. Cui tamen inhærenti justitiæ (quod sit imperfecta) non innitimur principaliter; sed ea tanquam interiori quodam experimento certificamur, nobis (qui talem renovationem spiritus nostri in nobis sentimus et experimur) remissionem peccatorum factam Christi consummatam justitiam nobis imputari atque ita Christum per fidem in nobis habitare." f. 13.

The statement of the Bishop of Bitonto, to the same effect as that contained in this extract, has already been given in Lecture III. p. 69.; to which might be added that of Seripando, the Augustine-general, which agrees with it more closely still. Vid. Pallav. Hist. viii. 11. § 4. Such too was the doctrine of Pighius, (vid. Bellarm. de Just. ii. 1. and Gerhard and Field as above,) from whose work on the Ratisbon Conference, I make the following extract:—Justificat ergo nos Deus Pater bonitate sua gratuita qua nos in Christo complectitur, dum eidem insertos, innocentia et justitia Christi nos induit; quæ una, ut vera et perfecta est, quæ Dei sustinere conspectum potest, ita unam pro nobis sisti oportet tribunali divini judicii, et velut causæ nostræ intercessorem eidem repræsentari, &c. Controv. Ratispon. ii. G. iii. Nos dicimus, nec fide, nec charitate nostra nos justificari coram Deo, si *formaliter et proprie* loquamur, sed *una Dei in Christo justitia*, una Christi nobis communicata justitia, una ignoscente nobis peccata nostra Dei misericordia . . . Ut vero intelligamus nos



justificari seu fide seu charitate, velut dispositionibus aut mediis quibusdam in nobis ad justificationis gratiam a Deo obtinendam necessariis, nos utramque et fidem et charitatem necessario requirimus, sed hanc non illam esse *dispositionem proximam et inseparabilem* a justificationis gratia etiam a nobis demonstratum est. *ibid.* I. The same is the doctrine of Valentinus, Bishop of Hildesheim, in a work written in 1535, with a view of composing the controversies of the day, and presented to the Emperor about the time of the Diet of Worms, 1545. I give an extract of it as it is preserved by Seckendorf. Comm. iii. 31. § 121. "Addit," says that writer, "quæ Lutheranæ doctrinæ propius accedere videntur, donatam nobis *justitiam Christi*, ejusque merita nostra esse, et nobis imputari; sed mox subjungit, per hanc imputativam meritorum Christi justitiam, *justitiam aliam*, voluntati nostræ nempe inhærentem, justitiam, id est, propriam a nobis per charitatem recipi; *hic duabus justitiis* simul hominem justificari *eamque separari non posse*, et priorem amitti nisi altera sequatur." Valentinus assented, moreover, to the doctrine that fides formata justifies. Cassander's doctrine is the same in his Consultatio: "De ipsa autem justitia qua justificamur, magna hactenus certamina exstiterant, aliis in sola Christi justitia nobis imputata, aliis in justitia novæ vitæ nobis communicata justificationis formam ponentibus, etiam postea a doctissimis viris observatum sit, ex Apostolica doctrina et Patrum traditione *utramque justitiam* in justificationis ratione conjungi debere. . . . Justificari hominem non sola imputatione sed etiam veræ justitiæ participatione manifesta declarat analogia illa peccati et justitiæ ex inobedientia et obedientia unius hominis, quæ explicatur a Paulo, Rom. v." —Apud Grotium, Oper. vol. v. He then proceeds to say this was Bucer's opinion, who however shall now speak for himself.

15. Bucer's opinion is of some importance to those who judge of the doctrine of the English Church by the views of those who had share in the Reformation of the 16th century. I shall therefore give some considerable extracts from his writings:—He will be found to speak like a Lutheran concerning the office of faith under the gospel; but that does not interfere with his doctrine on the point in question, of there being two forms in justification:—

The following is the statement presented by the Emperor's directions to the Conference at Ratisbon, A.D. 1541, and assented to by Bucer among others:—*Firma itaque est et sana doctrina, per fidem vivam et efficacem justificari peccatorem. Nam per illam Deo grati et accepti sumus propter Christum. Vocamus autem fidem vivam, motum Spiritus sancti, quo vere pœnitentes veteris vitæ eriguntur ad Deum, et vere apprehendunt misericordiam in Christo promissam, ut jam vere sentiant, quod remissionem peccatorum et reconciliationem propter meritum Christi gratuita Dei bonitate acceperunt; et clamant ad Deum, Abba Pater. Id quod tamen nulli obtingit, nisi etiam simul infundatur caritas, sanans voluntatem, ut voluntas sancta, quemadmodum Divus Augustinus ait, incipiat implere legem. Fides ergo viva est, quæ et apprehendit misericordiam in Christo ac credit justitiam quæ est in Christo, sibi gratis imputari, et quæ simul pollicitationem spiritus et caritatem accipit. Ita quod fides quidem justificans est illa fides, quæ est efficax per caritatem, sed interim hoc verum est, quod hac fide eatenus justificamur, id est, acceptamur et reconciliamur Deo, quatenus apprehendit misericordiam et justitiam, quæ nobis imputatur propter Christum et ejus meritum, non propter dignitatem seu perfectionem justitiæ nobis in Christo communicatæ. Etsi autem qui justificatur justitiam accipit, et habet per Christum etiam inhærentem, sicut dicit Apostolus, Abluti estis, sanctificati estis, jus-*

tificati estis, &c. (quare Sancti Patres justificari etiam pro eo quod est inhærentem justitiam accipere, usurparunt) tamen anima fidelis huic non innitur, sed soli justitiæ Christi, nobis donatæ, sine qua omnino nulla esse potest justitia. Et sic fide in Christum justificamur seu reputamur justî, id est, accepti per ipsius merita, non propter nostram dignitatem aut opera; et propter inhærentem justitiam eo justî dicimur, quia quæ justa sunt operamur, juxta illud Joannis, Qui facit justitiam justus est.—Liber. Propos. ad Comp. Rel. It is observable that this statement was as a whole considered so little Protestant, that a complaint was made to Luther by the Elector of Saxony against Melanchthon for having signed it. It was thought to be an undoing of the Confession of Augsburgh, and especial offence was taken at the word *efficax* applied to fides, as if it implied fides formata. The account is contained in Seckendorf Comm. iii. 23. § 87. It should be noticed that while Luther thus casts off Bucer, expressly declaring his suspicions of him, Cassander, in the work already referred to, claims him as agreeing with himself.

But Bucer's opinion is more clearly stated in his own words four or five years afterwards in the second Conference at Ratisbon, in which he drew up a paper stating the points of argument, dissent, and ambiguity between him and the Romanists. He says, Hanc . . . *inchoatam justitiam*, justitiam non esse eam qua justî sumus apud Deum, ita ut *propter* illam vita æterna nobis debeatur. Cum *ex parte* tantum et imperfecta sit nec legi Dei satisfaciatur dum hic vivimus; ideo aliam in nobis nempe Dei justitiam esse qua Christo Domino confidamus, &c. Acta Coll. Rat. Ult. (Lovan. 1547.) Again: Tum ille orsus (Bucerus) multis verbis de fide apprehendente dicere, qua apprehendamus Christi justitiam, quæ vera perfecta que hominis justificatio sit. Hanc *vitæ justitiam* nominari a Paulo,

quam porro sequatur *nostra illa inhærens atque inchoata justitia, &c.—Ibid.*

In the following passage he speaks of justification through spiritual obedience, as strongly as St. Austin in the passages quoted in Lecture II.:—Non est igitur ex *Lege justitia*; imo qui ex operibus Legis sunt, execrationi existunt obnoxii, Gal. iii. 10. id est, qui *nihil præter Legem et suas vires* habuerint, ut opera eorum tantum a *Lege* sint extorta, non ultro nec Spiritu edita, hi execrationi sunt obnoxii; quia nequeunt omnia quæ *Lex* exigit, præstare. Tales autem ipsa *Lex* testatur execratos esse. *Lex* vetat ea ad quæ natura propensissima est, scilicet, amorem nostri et quæ hic quærit. . . . Ita a *Lege* bona et sancta, institutaque ad vitam, nihil nobis *nondum Spiritu vivificante donatis*, quam ut peccati cognitio, ita et incrementum ac consequenter ira Dei nostrique condemnatio provenit. . . . *Legem* igitur abolemus per fidem? Absit, sed *Legem* stabilimus. . . . Necessarium . . . ut ante pestifer hic animi morbus tollatur. Id quum *Lex* præstare nequeat, et ex sola gratia Dei donantis bonum Legis amantem *Spiritum* nobis contingit, *consequens est nos ex gratia et haudquaquam ex Lege justificari*. Hanc itaque *gratiam* quum Christus nobis meruerit, ipse unus Author est nostræ justificationis. Enar. in Matt. v. 19. Vid. also Enar. in xv. 10—20.

As might be expected, he holds the doctrine of fides formata, nay, he condemns the use of the word sola, as dangerous; he says, “Quia vero danda est opera, nequem vel verbulo offendamus, nemo gravari debet, (cum videt offendi homines quod sancti scribunt, nos sola fide justificari) adjicere viva, *formata*, per dilectionem efficaci, aut quid hujusmodi. . . . Ut igitur nemo ne veris quidem offendendus est, ita satis habebō vocibus uti Scripturæ et dicere, Justum fide vivere; fide nos justificari et salvari,

omisso quod tantopere offendit, Sola.”—In Psalm. 2. Vid. also a passage quoted by Bull, Harm. ii. 2. § 8.

16. So much space has been given to Bucer’s doctrine, because he is in small degree connected with our own Reformation; and such as his has been the current doctrine of the English Church. Our divines, though of very different Schools, have, with a few exceptions, agreed in this, that justification is gained by obedience in the shape of faith, that is, an obedience which confesses it is not sufficient, and trusts solely in Christ’s merits for acceptance; which is in other words the doctrine of two righteousnesses, a perfect and imperfect; not the Roman, that obedience justifies without a continual imputation of Christ’s merits; nor the Protestant, that imputation justifies distinct from obedience; but a middle way, that obedience justifies *in*, or *under* Christ’s Covenant, or sprinkled with Christ’s meritorious sacrifice. It would be easy to show this in the case of Bull, Taylor, Barrow, Tillotson, and Wake, who implies his agreement with Bossuet on this point, Expos. Art. 5. Nay, it is almost the opinion of the Calvinists which is worth remarking. Davenant, for instance, grants the doctrine of *justitia inchoata*. He grants it is true righteousness in the same sense in which a white wall, though not perfectly white, has whiteness, (vid. Extract, p. 91.) and he grants that inherent righteousness is justification in a *passive* sense, or what he calls *justifaction*, c. 22; that is, in fact, we have two righteousnesses, a perfect and an imperfect, Christ’s and our own; the point in which he differs being merely this, whether this inchoate righteousness can be said to tend towards justification, or to serve us in any stead in God’s sight. And this would seem very much a question of words; for if he means to deny it is such as we can *trust* to, Bucer confesses this distinctly; but that there is something good in it, he surely cannot deny unless he

will contend there is no whiteness in a wall that is partially white. Nay, in one place he confesses as to a kindred point, Non igitur cum Patribus *neque cum hisce sanioribus Pontificiis* lis ulla nobis erit de nudo meriti vocabulo (quanquam multo melius et tutius est ab hoc vocabulo abstinere), sed contra nuperos Papistas dimicabimus.—De Just. Act. c. 53.

To the same effect Hooker, whose view of justification is supposed to be adverse to Bucer's and Bull's; "I will not in this place dispute . . . whether truly it may not be said, that penitent both weeping and fasting are meant to blot out sin, means whereby, through God's unspeakable and undeserved mercy, we obtain or procure to ourselves pardon; which attainment unto any gracious benefit by Him bestowed, the phrase of Antiquity useth to express by the name of merit." Eccl. Pol. v. Hooker then holds that God has not only made His Son Righteousness to us by imputation, but that He does for us *still more*; He *begins* actually to *make* us in this life what Christ is, righteous. That doctrine surely is neither derogatory to God's grace nor an incentive to man's pride, which, while it *adds* a gift, does not tend to dispense with the utter necessity of Christ's merits for our justification. In like manner Chamier makes this curious confession:—Nos . . . non negamus justitiam nostram aliquo modo *constare justitia inhærente*; quod sæpe testati sumus; nimirum quia necesse sit nos mori peccatis et vivere Deo. Sed iidem justitiæ *proram et puppim* constituimus *in remissione peccatorum*; nimirum, quia hæc nos apud Deum constituit justos quod perfectio virtutum non potest. Quid ergo discriminis est? nimirum, quia ut *duas formales* causas ita duas distinguimus justitias; *quia* absurdum sit, unius ejusdemque rei geminam formam esse, itaque justitiam nostram, quatenus constat remissione peccatorum, cum Paulo justificationem, eam

autem quæ perfectione virtutum, sanctificationem appellavimus. xxi. 19. 9. (Vid. Davenant de Just. Hab. xxv. p. 360.) Just before he has found fault with the Council of Trent for assigning "unica," one only, formal cause in opposition to St. Austin, who made two, and made not the inherent but the imputed righteousness the chief. In another place he hails Bellarmin's explanation of the phrase, "Christ our righteousness," (by which he seems to assign a double formal cause to justification,) as all but the same as his own. Certe si pauca vel demas vel commode interpreteris, nihil est in hac Bellarmini solutione quod non libenter admittamus. xxi. 17. § 25. Nostram in Bellarmini verbis mentem læti agnoscimus, et optamus, ut vere sic sentiant Jesuitæ, sic sentiant omnes Papistæ. *ibid.* § 38. This is not the first passage which has already been referred to from Bellarmin, about trusting to works, in which he comes near to an agreement with the Protestants. In like manner, while Bellarmin and the Romanists call love the extrinsic, and therefore *accidental form* of justifying faith, Calvin calls it its *inseparable accident*, (Antid. as above) and says that justification and sanctification are as inseparable as light and heat in the sun. All this being considered, it does not seem rash to say with Grotius, that, so that we acknowledge that man does not procure remission of sins by any thing he can do, but yet is retained in God's favour by obedience, "cætera quæ disputantur," *theologically* not *practically*, "sunt Scholastica et Metaphysicalia."—Animadv. in Rivet. 4.

17. To sum up again, that we may not lose ourselves :—all parties seem to agree that there are two main essential conditions, or constituting causes, of a soul being in the state of justification, God's bounty and our sanctification; and there are two extreme opinions, both dangerous, and at first sight paradoxical; the one that God's bountiful acceptance of the regenerate is inde-

pendent of that Atonement through which they become regenerate, the other that their holiness is not really and intrinsically good even considered as the work of the Holy Ghost. Putting these two extravagances, as they may be called, aside, all parties will be found to agree, that is, *theologically* speaking, and *so far as this doctrine is concerned*, (for I am not going to the question of moral differences, or differences in creeds, in existing parties and individual writers,)—with this one point of controversy, viz., whether God's mercy, considered as the form of justification, is an external form or not. To say that the proper form of justification is external to us, seems, on the face of it, unnatural; yet how shall we say it is within us, without confusing it with our own inherent righteousness? The run of controversialists then have taken this side or that, according as they were on the one hand clearminded, or on the other hand sensitively alive to their own moral deficiency and unprofitableness. Great divines, however, have approximated to an agreement; thus Lombard and St. Thomas, and, in modern times, Petavius, declare that grace, or the Holy Spirit Himself indwelling, is the formal cause of justification, and thus appear to have avoided an intellectual difficulty without falling into a worse moral one. And it is remarkable that Hooker, in his *Treatise on Justification*, in spite of his just abhorrence of the *practical* corruptions of Romanism on this point, virtually confesses the same doctrine with the divines last mentioned. After speaking of three kinds of righteousness, Imputed, Habitual, and Actual, he proceeds: "If here it be demanded which of these we do *first* receive, I answer that the Spirit, the virtue of the Spirit, the habitual justice which is ingrafted, the external justice of Jesus Christ which is imputed, these we receive all at one and the same time; whensoever we have any of these we have all; they go together; yet sith



no man is justified except he believe, and no man believeth except he has faith, and no man except he hath received the Spirit of adoption hath faith, forasmuch as they do necessarily infer justification, and justification doth of necessity presuppose them, we must needs hold that *imputed righteousness*, in dignity being the chiefest, is, notwithstanding, *in order the last of all these*.”—§ 21. Here it is said that whereas *in time* these separate gifts go together, yet *in order* imputation *comes upon* the gift of the Spirit; what is this, divested of verbal differences, but to say that the Holy Spirit is the formal cause of justification? Now, turning from Hooker to the following statements of Mr. Knox, (with whose works I have too little acquaintance to form an opinion of their theological merits,) let the reader decide whether there is any great difference between them in the particular point which is before us. “Our being reckoned righteous coram Deo always and essentially implies a *substance of . . . righteousness previously implanted in us*; and . . . our reputative justification is the strict and inseparable *result* of this previous moral justification. I mean that the reckoning us righteous indispensably *presupposes* an inward reality of righteousness, *on which* this reckoning is founded.”—Remains, vol. i. p. 278. Now if Mr. Knox means that we are in matter of *fact* and *time* sanctified before we are justified, then he differs from Hooker, as also from St. Austin’s famous maxim, *Sequuntur opera justificatum, &c.*; but if he means in order of nature, (as when we say that wisdom is “first pure, then peaceable,”) then I conceive he agrees with him. And in p. 265 he expressly declares he means *in order of nature*. Or again, let the coincidence of doctrine between Calvin and the Council of Trent be observed in the following passages:—Calvin, “Admonet [Petrus], ne irrita sit sacri illius *sanguinis effusio, arcana Spiritus irrigatione* animas nostras *eo pur-*

*gari.*”—Instit. iii. 1. § 1. The Council, “*Quanquam enim nemo possit esse justus, nisi cui merita passionis Domini nostri Jesu Christi communicantur, id tamen in hoc impii justificatione fit, dum ejusdem sanctissimæ passionis merito per Spiritum sanctum charitas Dei diffunditur in cordibus eorum qui justificantur.*”—Sess. 6. c. 7. Cf. the words of the Homily on Almsdeeds quoted at the end of Lecture XII.

18. In the foregoing Lectures a view has been taken substantially the same as this, but approaching more nearly in language to the Calvinists; viz. that Christ indwelling is our righteousness; only what is with them a matter of words I would wish to use in a real sense, as expressing a sacred mystery; and therefore I have spoken of it, in the language of Scripture, as the indwelling of Christ through the Spirit. Stronger language cannot be desired than that which the Calvinists use on the subject; so much so, that it may well be believed that many who use it, as the great Hooker himself at the time he wrote his Treatise, mean what they say. For instance, the words of a celebrated passage which occurs in it, taken literally, do most entirely express the doctrine on the subject which seems to me the Scriptural and Catholic view.—“Christ hath merited righteousness for as many as are found in Him. In Him God findeth us, if we be faithful; for by faith we are incorporated into Christ. Then, although in ourselves we be altogether sinful and unrighteous, yet even the man which is impious in himself, full of iniquity, full of sin, him being found in Christ through faith, and have his sin remitted through repentance, him God beholdeth with a gracious eye, putteth away his sin by not imputing it, taketh quite away the punishment due thereunto by pardoning it, and accepteth him in Jesus Christ, as perfectly righteous, as if he had fulfilled all that was commanded

him in the Law; shall I say more perfectly righteous than if himself had fulfilled the whole Law? I must take heed what I say; but the Apostle saith, God made Him to be sin, &c. Such we are in the sight of God the Father, as is the very Son of God Himself," &c. Or again; Davenant speaks thus:—"Christi Mediatoris in nobis *habitantis* atque per *Spiritum sese nobis unientis* perfectissima obedientia, est formalis causa justificationis nostræ."—De Just. Habit. 22. And Calvin still more strongly:—"Conjunctio igitur illa capitis et membrorum, *habitatio Christi in cordibus nostris*, mystica denique unio a nobis in summo gradu statuitur; ut Christus noster factus, donorum quibus præditus est nos faciat consortes. *Non ergo eum extra nos procul speculamur*, ut nobis imputetur ejus justitia, *sed quia ipsum induimus*, et insiti sumus in ejus corpus, unum denique nos secum efficere dignatus est, ideo justitiæ societatem nobis cum eo esse gloriamur."—Instit. iii. 11. § 10. Many striking passages might be extracted from Luther to the same effect; as, for instance, one about Baptism, quoted by Dr. Pusey in his Work, p. 28.; or again, vid. Bucer on the text, "All have sinned and come short of the glory of God."

It may be proper to say here that at the time of the Reformation Osiander advocated the notion that the Christian's righteousness, or the formal cause of our justification, was the essential righteousness of the Divine Nature transfused into the justified; which bears the same relation to the doctrine which I have advocated, as the Manichæan blasphemies concerning the union of the substance of God with the natural world, to the Scripture truth that in Him "we move and live and have our being."—Calvin refutes it; Instit. iii. 11. § 5. &c.

19. And so much on the *proper* formal cause of justification, which with the Romanists I would consider as an in-

ward gift, yet with the Protestants not a quality of the mind. Numerous passages might be cited from the Fathers in point, but it would be scarcely to the purpose to do so, for Scripture itself, to go no further, is as clear, as far as words go, on the doctrine of a Divine Indwelling, as the Fathers can be; and the question is, as to its *interpretation*, whether literal or not. And if its forcible statements can be explained away, so may those of the Fathers, who, the subject not being one of controversy in their day, do not speak with more scientific exactness than Scripture itself. I will but refer to the following passages, and that with this purpose, to show that we have a gift under the gospel, not moral yet inward. Iren. Hær. v. 6. et seq. Cyprian. ad Donat. init. Cyril. Hieros. Cat. xvii. 8. Greg. Naz. Orat. 40. p. 640. Basil. Hom. de Bapt. 3. in Eunom. v. fin. Ambros. de Isaac. et An. c. v. Chrysost. Hom. 40 in 1 Cor. p. 452. (*ed. Duc.*) in 2 Cor. iii. 18. in Gal. iii. fin. in Col. ii. Hom. 6. Greg. Nyss. de Beatitud. iii. p. 798, 9. in Cant. v. 2, 5, 13. vi. 4. pp. 633, 644, 676, 697. August. in Psalm. xviii. En. i. 8. in 1 Joann. iii. Tract. 5. § 10. iv. Tract. 8. Cyril. Alex. in Isai. lib. iv. Orat. 2. p. 591. in v. 2. pp. 759, 760. in lxi. 10. p. 867—9. de Trin. vi. p. 595.

But as to the other part of the subject, the question of the *improper* formal cause of justification, something may be advantageously said as to the mode in which the Fathers view it, because it has been recently made a question. I consider they held our inherent righteousness as really righteousness, and really availing as far as it goes; that it has a value as being wrought by the Spirit, or, in other words, that it is like a reflexion of the sun's light, a real illumination, yet as little superseding the sun as the moon does. Or to take a sacred illustration, which must be used as an *analogy*, not as an exact *similitude*; as the Word

of God Incarnate is infinitely holy, and yet His manhood has its own essential holiness too, though finite, so we are made absolutely acceptable to God through the propitiatory indwelling of His Son, yet are not without the beginnings of inherent acceptableness wrought in us by that indwelling. I feel myself obliged to refer to the Fathers' doctrine on this point, because a question, as I have observed, has been lately raised about it by a writer whom every member of the English Church must mention with respect and gratitude, Mr. Faber. He considers, if I understand him rightly, in his Primitive doctrine of Justification, that our holiness and works can in no sense be said to justify us in God's sight. It would be disrespectful, in writing on this subject, to pass over a protest such as Mr. Faber's without notice; but whatever I shall say, which will be very little, must be considered merely defensive, not spoken controversially.

I observe then, that the point is not, whether we can have any righteousness *before* God justifies us, nor is it whether we are not justified by Christ's righteousness *imputed*, nor whether our own righteousness is pure enough to be acceptable without a continual imputation of His, (all which the Fathers teach,) but whether they do not also teach that our righteousness *after* justification, as far as it goes, is *real*, tending to fulfil the perfect Law, and such as to be a beginning, outset, or ground on which, when purified and completed by His, God may justify us. I think they do teach this; and first will make several extracts from their writings by way of specimens.

20. First, let us hear St. Cyprian, whose doctrine has been already acknowledged in the Homily:—"Cum Dominus adveniens sanasset illa quæ Adam portaverat vulnera, et venena serpentis antiqua curasset, legem dedit sano et præcepit ne ultra jam peccaret, ne quid peccanti gravius eve-

niret. Coarctati eramus et in angustum innocentiae præscriptione conclusi. Nec haberet quid fragilitatis humanæ infirmitas atque imbecillitas faceret, nisi iterum pietas divina subveniens, *justitiæ et misericordiæ operibus* ostensis, *viam* quandam *tuendæ* salutis aperiret, *ut sordes postmodum quas-cunque contrahimus eleemosynis abluamus*. Loquitur in Scripturis divinis Spiritus-sanctus et dicit, ‘Eleemosynis et fide delicta purgantur.’ Non utique illa delicta quæ fuerant ante contracta; nam illa Christi sanguine et sanctificatione purgantur. Item denuo dicit:—‘Sicut aqua extinguit ignem, sic eleemosyna extinguit peccatum.’ Hic quoque ostenditur et probatur quia sicut lavacro aquæ salutaris gehennæ ignis extinguitur, ita et eleemosynis atque operationibus justis delictorum flamma sopitur. Et quia semel in Baptismo remissa peccatorum datur, *assidua et jugis operatio* Baptismi instar imitata Dei rursus indulgentiam largitur.”—De Op. et Eleemos. init.

According to St. Jerome, Hilarion’s last words were:—“Egredere, quid times? egredere anima mea, quid dubitas? Septuaginta prope annis servisti Christo, et mortem times?” In hæc verba exhalavit spiritum.—In vit. *fin*. What makes this passage so beautiful is that he *did* fear; evidencing that union of hope and solicitude, of thoughts of self, yet looking off from self, that belief in a double righteousness, which I am illustrating.

St. Hilary, in like manner, declares in the following passage, both the *value* of good works yet their *insufficiency*. “Spes in *miseriordia* Dei, in sæculum et in sæculum sæculi est.” Non enim *ipsa* illa justitiæ opera *sufficient* ad *perfectæ* beatitudinis *meritum*, *nisi* misericordia Dei etiam in hac justitiæ voluntate humanarum demutationum et motuum vitia non reputat. Hinc illud Prophetæ dictum est, Melior est misericordia tua super vitam; quia quamvis *probabilis* per justitiæ operationem

vita justorum sit, tamen per misericordiam Dei *plus* meriti consequetur. Ex hac enim vita in vitam proficit æternam; et operationem justitiæ in tantum misericordia Dei muneratur, ut miserans justitiæ voluntatem, æternitatis quoque suæ justum quemque tribuat esse participem.— Tract. in Ps. 51. § 23.

St. Chrysostom thus comments on Gal. v. 5:—Οὐδενὸς ἐκείνων τῶν νομίμων δεόμεθα, φησὶν· ἀρκεῖ γὰρ ἡ πίστις ἡμῖν πνεῦμα παρασχεῖν καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ δικαιοσύνην, καὶ τὰ πολλὰ καὶ μεγάλα ἀγαθὰ.

21. Passages from St. Austin have already been extracted in the notes on Lecture II., but I am tempted to give one at greater length from his Sermon on Phil. iii., in which however, for the sake of brevity, I have omitted some sentences:—"Rid thee, I say, rid thee of thyself; thou art in thy way; if thou buildest up thyself, thou art building a ruin. Unless the Lord build the house, their labour is but lost that build it. Bear to part with thine own righteousness. The Apostle counts it dung, though it be of God's Law, because it is his own. They, ignorant of God's righteousness, and desirous to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God. Think not because thou art called Christian, that thou canst not possibly stumble at this rock of offence. If thou take from His grace, thou art stumbling at Him. It is a slighter thing to stumble at Christ on the Cross, than at Christ in heaven. . . . Righteousness thou must have, but of grace, of God, not thine. It is said, Let Thy priests be clothed with righteousness. A robe comes from without, it does not grow as hair does; sheep only have fleeces of their own. Of this the Apostle preaches; receive it from God. He says, 'And be found in Him, not having my own righteousness which is of the Law,' though of the Law yet mine, 'but that which is through the faith

of Christ,' which is gained from God, which is of God, the righteousness in faith, 'to know Him and the power of His resurrection.' Acknowledge here thy justification; for we are justified by His resurrection.

" This justification then, my brethren, may we keep as far as we have it, and *increase* as far as we *have it not*, and complete when we come there, when it shall be said, ' O death, where is thy victory? where is thy sting?' But *all of God*; and yet *not as if we were asleep*, not as if we did not exert ourselves, not as if we did not will. Without thy will the righteousness of God will not be in thee. The will is none other but thine, the righteousness none other but God's. There can be a righteousness of God without thy will, but in thee beside thy will it cannot be. ' He was given for our sins, and rose again for our justification.' What means, ' for our justification?' to justify us, to make us righteous. Thou wilt be the *work of God*, not only in being a man, but in being righteous. To be righteous is a higher thing than to be a man; if God made thee man and thou makest thyself righteous, thou doest a higher thing than God has done. However, God made thee without thee, without thy consent to be made; for thou wast not; now, He who made thee without thee, justifies thee with thee. He made thee without thy knowledge, He justifies thee with thy will. Yet it is He Himself justifies, lest it be thy righteousness; lest thou return to loss, and harm, and dung, see thou be found in Him, not having thine own righteousness which is of the Law, but the righteousness through the faith of Christ which is of God, the righteousness from faith to know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and ' the communication of His sufferings.' Behold, His power shall be yours; the communication of His sufferings shall be your power.

" But what will there be in these communications of



Christ's passion, if not love; what love? not mere feeling but charity. For, says he, though I give my body to burn and have not charity, I am nothing. Charity must be present, that the communication of Christ's sufferings may profit thee. And whence is charity, but that it is poured over our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given us? Think little of thine own spirit, receive the Spirit of God. Let not thy spirit fear, lest when the Spirit of God has begun to dwell in thee, it suffers straitness in thy body. When the Spirit of God has begun to dwell in thy body, He shall not thence expel thy spirit. Be not afraid; if thou entertainest a rich man, thou sufferest straitness. What shall I do? sayest thou? whither go I? whither shall I away? open for the abundant Spirit of God; thou shalt be expanded not straitened. 'Thou hast lengthened Thy steps under me,' thou sayest; but thou shalt say to thy Inhabitant, 'Thou shalt make room enough under me for to go.' Before Thou camest, I suffered straitness; Thou hast filled my storehouse; and not shut me out, but my straitness."—Serm. 169. It is an injustice to this most impressive sermon to present such a fragment of it to the reader, yet even so insufficient a translation may be useful by way of suggesting the mode in which the Fathers treat the doctrine of justification.

22. But on this subject the confessions of Protestants, perhaps, are worth more than the collection of any number of isolated passages; so let us turn to their testimony, and first of Luther:—"Philip Melanchthon said to me, the opinion of St. Austin of Justification (as it seemeth) was more consistent when he disputed not, than it was when he used to dispute; for thus he saith, We ought to hold that we are justified by faith, that is, by our Regeneration, or by being made new creatures. Now, if it be so, then we are not justified only by faith, but by all the gifts and

virtues of God given unto us. That is St. Austin's opinion. From hence cometh also that gift of grace of the school-divines, grace which maketh accepted. They allege also that love is the same grace that maketh us acceptable before God. Now what is your opinion, sir, do you hold, that a man is justified by this Regeneration, as is St. Austin's opinion?" &c.—Table Talk, c. xiii. Next Calvin:—"Scholæ in deterius semper aberrarunt, donec tandem præcipiti ruina devolutæ sunt ad quendam Pelagianismum. Ac ne *Augustini quidem* sententia, vel saltem loquendi ratio *per omnia* recipienda est. Tametsi enim egregie hominem omni justitiæ laude spoliât, ac totam Dei gratiæ transcribit, *gratiam tamen ad sanctificationem refert*, qua in vitæ novitatem per Spiritum regeneramur.—Instit. iii. 11. § 15. Bucer says, Patres *plerique* justificare pro justum facere accipiunt. In Eph. ii. p. 63. Chemnitz, "Patribus . . . licet *plerumque* verbum justificare accipiant pro renovatione qua efficiuntur in nobis per Spiritum opera justitiæ, non movemus litem, ubi juxta Scripturam recte et commode tradunt doctrinam," &c. p. 129. It must be observed that Chemnitz holds with Bucer the doctrine of inchoate righteousness, so that in saying that the Fathers differ from him in the use of the words, he does not mean to say they deny that Christians are really righteous. Gerhard; "Scriptura verbum justificandi accipit in significatione forensi pro absolutione a reatu peccatorum, sed Patres *quandoque* secuti grammaticam vocis compositionem pro donatione inhærentis justitiæ usurpant." De Justif. § 245. Chamier, after speaking of Bernard's doctrine, says, "Concedam justificationem intelligi pro infusione; quod, etsi *crebrum* est apud Patres, non est ex stilo Pauli." xxi. 19. § 16. Davenant more cautiously, but to the same effect, "*Si aliquis Patrum*, propter arctam illam cognatam et *individuum* concatenationem gratiæ infusæ sive inhærentis cum

gratia remissionis ac imputatione justitiæ Christi, hæc inter se commiscere videatur, non debemus nos idcirco illa confundere, quæ Spiritus Dei in Sacris Scripturis accurate solet distinguere. . . . Neque huic sententiæ nostræ reclamare patres illico judicandi sunt, si justificandi vocabulum ad justitiæ infusionem aliquando referant; nam idem vocabulum diverso sensu, non modo a patribus, sed etiam ab ipsis Scripturis quandoque usurpatur. Non itaque jam quærimus de diversis hujus vocabuli justificationis apud Patres significationibus; sed (quod theologicæ disquisitionis proprium est) de ipso dogmate justificationis quid illi senserint indagamus.”—*De Just. Hab. c. 25.* Barrow’s testimony has been quoted above, pp. 108, 9, note.

Some of these writers account for this difference between the Primitive and the Protestant modes of speech, by saying, the subject of justification was never accurately discussed, which I suppose is both the fact and does partly account for it. But it is impossible to read ever so little of the Fathers’ works, as, for instance, the extract from St. Austin last given, without seeing that their tone of mind, and not their words only, are quite distinct from Lutheranism and Calvinism. It is remarkable that the same confession is made on their part by Romanists also. A passage from Vasquez to that effect has been given above, p 108. Now supposing, as Bucer and his Roman opponents of Cologne, and again Valentinus and Seripando, strenuous opponents of the Lutherans, maintain, as the Calvinists Chamier and Davenant almost grant, and as the body of English divines imply, the Fathers held two formal causes of justification, a proper and an improper, this dissatisfaction of both parties with their writings is accounted for.

23. Mr. Faber has drawn up a list of passages from their writings in favour of the view he maintains against Mr. Knox. How far they avail against that original and

instructive writer, it falls to others to decide; they do not seem to militate against what has been maintained in these Lectures, as an instance will best show. This shall be the Epistle of St. Clement of Rome, which I select, because it is the earliest of the Fathers' writings, and the shortest, and insisted on by Mr. Faber, and as favourable a witness for the Lutheran side as any that can be taken.

He speaks as follows:—*οὐ δι' ἑαυτῶν δικαιούμεθα, οὐδὲ διὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας σοφίας ἢ συνέσεως, ἢ εὐσεβείας, ἢ ἔργων ὧν κατειργασάμεθα ἐν ὁσιότητι καρδίας, ἀλλὰ διὰ τῆς πίστεως.* c. 32. Now here the point in controversy is whether, when St. Clement says, *ἔργων ὧν κατειργασάμεθα ἐν ὁσιότητι καρδίας*, he means works done *since* faith and regeneration, or *before*. Mr. Faber considers that works *after* faith and regeneration are spoken of; and he thence concludes, what in that case irresistibly follows, that according to St. Clement, works after justification do *not* justify, but merely faith. And his *reason* for considering that St. Clement means works after justification, is, that no holy works at all are possible before justification. “What are the works done in holiness of heart,” he asks, “which Clement thus carefully shuts out from the office of justifying, quite as much as wisdom, and understanding, and piety? Indisputably, *by the very force and tenor of their definition*, they are works performed *after* the infusion of holiness into the heart by the gracious Spirit of God.” p. 83. Mr. Faber, then, does not deduce his proof *from the text* of St. Clement, but from *the force of a definition*, that is, from these two doctrines together,—first, that no works are holy but those which are done through the Holy Spirit; and next, that no works are done through the Holy Spirit before justification.

Granting both of these without entering into explanations, still the words in question need not refer to the holi-

ness of the justified, and, as I think the text itself shows, do not. If St. Clement had intended what Mr. Faber draws from him, he would rather have written thus:—δικαιούμεθα οὐ διὰ τῶν ἔργων ὧν κατεργαζόμεθα ἐν τῇ τῶν καρδιῶν ἡμῶν ὁσιότητι.

(1.) He changes his tense, “We *are* not justified by works which we *did* (not, ‘*have done*,’ as Mr. Faber translates) in holiness of heart.”

(2.) By omitting the article he naturally, I do not say necessarily, shows he is speaking of an hypothetical, not a real case. He says, “We are not justified by holy works which we did, for we did *none* ;” or in St. Jerome’s words, afterwards quoted by Mr. Faber, p. 122, “Convertentem impium per solam fidem justificat Deus, non per opera bona quæ non habuit.” Ἐν ὁσιότητι καρδίας is scarcely more than an adverb meaning “piously,” “holily.” Thus St. Paul speaks, Tit. iii. 5. ; οὐκ ἐξ ἔργων τῶν ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ. Cf. Heb. ix. 11—13. Χριστὸς δὲ παραγενόμενος ἀρχιερεὺς τῶν μελλόντων ἀγαθῶν, διὰ τῆς μείζονος καὶ τελειότερας σκηνῆς, οὐ <sup>α</sup> χειροποιήτου, τουτέστιν, οὐ ταύτης τῆς κτίσεως, οὐδε δι’ <sup>α</sup> αἵματος τράγων καὶ μόσχων, διὰ δὲ τοῦ ἰδίου αἵματος, κ. τ. λ. . . Εἰ γὰρ τὸ αἷμα ταύρων, κ. τ. λ. What makes this stronger is that St. Clement has just before been speaking of the legal righteousness of the Jews, which was *not* hypothetical, and has said it did not justify; and then he speaks thus:—πάντες οὖν ἐδοξάσθησαν καὶ ἐμεγαλύνθησαν, οὐ δι’ αὐτῶν, ἢ τῶν ἔργων αὐτῶν τῆς δικαιοπραγίας ἧς κατειργάσαντο.

But next, if, leaving the particular passage, we examine St. Clement’s Epistle throughout, we shall find that he nowhere speaks of Christ’s righteousness, or of faith as the instrument of apprehending it; but he speaks again and again of faith as a *moral* virtue, and joined to moral virtues, and in one place he speaks of *love* remitting sin and in

another of justification by *works*. If so, this early Father holds that *fides formata charitate* justifies; in other words, that *fides formata*, or renewed obedience, is a formal or constituting cause of justification, or that the righteousness of the regenerate is real. *E. g.* τίς γὰρ παρεπιδημήσας πρὸς ὑμᾶς τὴν πανάρετον καὶ βεβαίαν ὑμῶν πίστιν οὐκ ἐδοκίμασεν; *c. i.* πανάρετος is but another word for *formata*. Ἐνδυσώμεθα τὴν ὁμόνοιαν, ταπεινοφρονοῦντες, ἐγκρατεῶμενοι, ἀπὸ παντὸς ψιθυρισμοῦ καὶ καταλαλιᾶς πόρρω ἑαυτοὺς ποιοῦντες, ἔργοις δικαιοῦμενοι καὶ μὴ λόγοις, *c. 30.* Μακάριοί ἐσμεν, ἀγαπητοί, εἰ προστάγματα τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐποιούμεεν ἐν ὁμοιοῖα ἀγάπης, εἰς τὸ ἀφεθῆναι ἡμῖν δι' ἀγάπης τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν· Γέγραπται γάρ· μακάριοι ὧν ἀφέθησαν αἱ ἀνομίαι, καὶ ὧν ἐπεκαλύφθησαν αἱ ἁμαρτίαι. *c. 59.* St. Paul applies the passage in the Psalm here referred to, to justification by *faith*; St. Clement, then his “fellow-labourer,” when interpreting it of remission through *love*, explains *faith* to be *fides formata charitate*.

Other passages in the Epistle, as soon as they mention *faith*, go on to mention obedience of one kind or other in connexion with it, or interpret the “righteousness” which follows upon *faith* of inherent holiness; clearly implying that *faith* justifies as being of a moral nature, not as *apprehensive*, and is “taken for righteousness,” not as its *substitute* but as the seed, earnest, and anticipation of it,—being taken for what under God’s grace it will be in due time: *e. g.* the Apostles are called ἐκκλησίας πιστοὶ καὶ δικαιοτάτοι στύλοι. *c. 5.* St. Paul, τὸ γενναῖον τῆς πίστεως αὐτοῦ κλέος ἔλαβεν, δικαιοσύνην διδάξει ὅλον τὸν κόσμον. *ibid.* λάβωμεν Ἐνώχ, ὃς ἐν ὑπακοῇ δίκαιος εὑρεθεὶς μετετέθη. . . Νῶε πιστὸς εὑρεθεὶς διὰ τῆς λειτουργίας αὐτοῦ παλιγγενεσίαν κόσμῳ ἐκήρυξεν. *c. 9.* Ἀβραάμ ὁ φίλος προσαγορευθεὶς, πιστὸς εὑρέθη, ἐν τῷ αὐτὸν ὑπήκουον γενέσθαι τοῖς ῥήμασι τοῦ Θεοῦ. *c. 10.* διὰ πίστιν καὶ φιλοξενίαν ἐδόθη

αὐτῷ υἱὸς ἐν γήρα, καὶ δι' ὑπακοῆς προσήνεγκεν αὐτὸν  
 θυσίαν τῷ Θεῷ. *Ibid.* διὰ φιλοξενίαν καὶ εὐσέβειαν Λὼτ  
 ἐσώθη ἐκ Σοδόμων. c. 11. διὰ πίστιν καὶ φιλοξενίαν ἐσώθη  
 Ῥαὰβ ἡ πόρνη. c. 12. After speaking of humility, subor-  
 dination, mutual kindness, dutifulness, &c., he says, ταῦτα  
 δὲ πάντα βεβαιοῖ ἢ ἐν Χριστῷ πίστις. c. 22. τίνος χάριν  
 εὐλογήθη ὁ πατὴρ ἡμῶν Ἀβραὰμ, οὐχὶ δικαιοσύνην καὶ  
 ἀλήθειαν διὰ πίστεως ποιήσας; c. 31. After speaking of  
 brotherly love, he says, πύλη γὰρ δικαιοσύνης ἀνεργυῖα εἰς  
 ζωὴν αὐτή. Then after quoting Ps. cxviii, "Open Me the  
 gates of righteousness," &c. he proceeds: πολλῶν οὖν  
 πυλῶν ἀνεργυιῶν, ἢ ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ αὐτὴ ἐστὶν ἢ ἐν Χριστῷ  
 ἐν ᾗ μακάριοι πάντες οἱ εἰσελθόντες, καὶ κατεθύνοντες τὴν  
 πορείαν αὐτῶν ἐν ὁσιότητι καὶ δικαιοσύνῃ. c. 48. All this is  
 not in the *tone* of a Lutheran Protestant.

What has been explained of St. Clement's Epistle, might, it seems to me, be easily applied to the rest of Mr. Faber's extracts. Some of them teach what the foregoing Lectures have aimed at enforcing, that our justification consists primarily in Christ's righteousness, or (to speak more definitely) in Christ Himself the righteous, present in us; but none go to show that Christ does not gradually impart to us that righteousness which He is. For instance, St. Austin says, "per fidem [hominem] posse justificari etiamsi Legis opera non præcesserint; *sequuntur* enim justificatum, non præcedunt justificandum."—De Fid. et Op. 14. Let it be granted most fully that works before justification do not at all tend to justify, nor does faith; both faith and works are but preliminary conditions for justifying baptism, but neither till then "avail." After Baptism both are justifying, *i. e.* both partake in the righteousness of Christ imputed, and tend towards a perfect justification; faith, however, more properly and intimately than works, not as being apprehensive, which is a human

subtilty, but as being their root, and as having a special unexplained connexion with the invisible world. And so much upon the doctrine of the Fathers.

24. As I have throughout these remarks implied that the modern controversy on the subject of justification is not a vital one, inasmuch as all parties are agreed that Christ is the sole justifier, and that He makes holy those whom He justifies, it may be right, in conclusion, to give the decisions of some of our divines on this subject, that it may be seen how far such an opinion is safe. With this view, I will appeal to the three who have sometimes been considered the special lights of our later Church, Hooker, Taylor, and Barrow; of whom two will be found to sanction me, and the third, though apparently pronouncing the other way, to withdraw his judgment while he gives it.

Barrow speaks thus:—"In former times among the Fathers and the schoolmen, there doth not appear to have been any difference or debate about it; because, as it seems, men commonly having the same apprehensions about the matters, to which the word is applicable, did not so much examine or regard the strict propriety of expression concerning them; consenting in things, they did not fall to cavil and contend about the exact meaning of words. They did indeed consider distinctly no such points of doctrine as that of Justification, looking upon that word as used incidentally in some places of Scripture, for expression of points more clearly expressed in other terms; wherefore they do not make much of the word, as some divines now do.

"But in the beginning of the Reformation, when the discovery of some great errors, from the corruption and ignorance of former times, crept into vogue, rendered all things the subjects of contention, and multiplied contro-



versies, then did arise hot disputes about this point; and the right stating thereof seemed a matter of great importance; nor scarce was any controversy prosecuted with greater zeal and earnestness; whereas yet, so far as I can discern, about the real points of doctrine, whereto this word, according to the sense pretended, may relate, there hardly doth appear any material difference; and all the questions depending chiefly seem to consist about the manner of expressing things, which all agree in; or about the extent of the signification of words capable of larger or stricter acception: whence the debates about this point, among all sober and intelligent persons, might, as I conceive, easily be resolved or appeased, if men had a mind to agree and did not love to wrangle; if at least a consent in believing the same things, although under some difference of expression, would content them so as to forbear strife<sup>1</sup>.”

In like manner Bishop Taylor, recounting the chief points on which the controversy about Justification has turned:—“No man should fool himself by disputing about the philosophy of justification, and what causality faith hath in it, and whether it be the act of faith that justifies or the habit? whether faith as a good work or faith as an instrument? whether faith as it is obedience, or faith as it is an access to Christ? whether as a hand or as a heart? whether by its own innate virtue, or by the efficacy of the object? whether as a sign or as a thing signified? whether by introduction or by perfection? whether in the first beginnings, or in its last and best productions? whether by inherent worthiness or adventitious imputations? . . . These things are knotty and too intricate to do any good: they may amuse us, but never

<sup>1</sup> Sermon V. of Justification by Faith.

instruct us ; and they have already made men careless and confident, disputative and troublesome, proud and uncharitable ; but neither wiser nor better. Let us, therefore, leave these weak ways of troubling ourselves or others, and directly look to the theology of it, the direct duty, the end of faith, and the work of faith, the conditions and instruments of our salvation, the just foundation of our hopes, how our faith can destroy our sin, and how it can unite us unto God, how by it we can be made partakers of Christ's death, and imitators of His life. For since it is evident, by the premises, that this article is not to be determined or relied upon by arguing from words of many significations, we must walk by a clearer light, by such plain sayings and dogmatical propositions of Scripture, which evidently teach us our duty and place our hopes upon that which cannot deceive us, that is, which requires obedience, which call upon us to glorify God, and to do good to men, and to keep all God's commandments with diligence and sincerity<sup>1</sup>."

Such is the concordant testimony of Taylor and Barrow ; Hooker, however, the third great divine mentioned, decides the contrary way, declaring not only for one special view of justification, (for his particular opinion is not the point in question here,) but that the opposite opinion is a virtual denial of gospel truth. The Romanists, he says, profess "that they seek salvation by the blood of Christ; and that humbly they do use prayers, fastings, alms, faith, charity, sacrifice, sacraments, priests, only as the means appointed by Christ, to apply the benefit of His holy blood unto them; touching our good works, that in their own natures they are not meritorious, nor answerable to the joys of heaven; it cometh of the grace of Christ,

<sup>1</sup> Sermon on *Fides formata*, vol. vi. p. 271.

and not of the work itself, that we have by well doing a right to heaven and deserve it worthily. If any man think that I seek to varnish their opinions, to set the better foot of a lame cause foremost, let him know, that since I began thoroughly to understand their meaning, I have found their halting greater than perhaps it seemeth to them which know not the deepness of Satan, as the Blessed Divine speaketh." § 33. This passage, it must be candidly confessed, is by implication contrary to the sentiments maintained in the foregoing pages; but it does not avail the least as authority against them, for the following plain reason: because this great author, in the very Treatise in which he so speaks, confesses he is not acquiescing in the theology of the early Church; and, since we are not allowed to call any man our master on earth, Hooker, venerable as is his name, has no weight with any Christian, except as delivering what is agreeable to Catholic doctrine, which, as being unanimous and concordant, is Christ's doctrine. Did he indeed state his belief on any theological point, and declare it *was* the voice of Catholic consent, we might defer to his judgment; or did he but keep silence, we might take for granted he spoke with it; but in the instance before us, far from transmitting ancient doctrine, he declares that, according to the views he then held, or rather by the clamour of the Puritans was made to believe he held, the Greek Fathers were involved by implication in the heresy of Pelagianism; and he excuses them merely upon the plea of their having anticipated that error in ignorance. To accuse a number of Greek Fathers of mistake on this point, will be found virtually to accuse all; and to accuse the Greek Fathers, virtually to oppose Catholic consent. His words are as follows: "The heresy of free-will was a millstone about the Pelagians' neck: shall we therefore give sentence of death inevitable against

all those Fathers in the Greek Church, which, being mis-persuaded, died in the error of free-will?" The doctrines of grace and justification are too closely connected to allow of a Treatise judging rightly of the importance of questions concerning the latter, which is not to be followed in its view of the former. I conceive, then, that Hooker makes for the foregoing remarks as truly as Taylor and Barrow; for he shows us as in an instance, that a divine cannot make the Protestant doctrine of justification a fundamental of faith, without involving himself in an accusation of them, who together form an authority greater than even the greatest individual teacher. But there is enough in Hooker's writings and history to show that this valuable Treatise, written before his views were fully matured, and published after his death, is not to be taken on all points as authority.

THE END.



*In one thick octavo volume.*

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HON. THE EARL OF ABERDEEN,  
PRESIDENT OF THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES, &c.

A

CLASSICAL AND ARCHÆOLOGICAL  
DICTIONARY

OF THE

MANNERS, CUSTOMS, LAWS, INSTITUTIONS, ARTS, ETC.

OF THE

CELEBRATED NATIONS OF ANTIQUITY,

AND OF

THE MIDDLE AGES.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED

A SYNOPTICAL AND CHRONOLOGICAL VIEW OF ANCIENT HISTORY.

By P. AUSTIN NUTTALL, LL.D.

TRANSLATOR OF JUVENAL'S SATIRES, WORKS OF HORACE, &c.

LONDON :

WHITTAKER AND CO. ; T. TEGG ; DUNCAN AND MALCOLM ; SIMPKIN,  
MARSHALL, AND CO. ; J. SOUTER ; J. BOHN ; AND HARVEY AND DARTON.  
OXFORD : J. H. PARKER.

---

M.DCCC.XL.

[Printed by Nuttall and Hodgson, Gough Square.]

## ADDRESS.

THE leading object of the Author has been to present a work similar in form to Lempriere's Classical Dictionary, and at the same time equally useful in matter; and thus (as Dr. Lempriere justly observes) "by a number of historical facts to draw a picture of ancient times not less instructive than entertaining." There is, however, this material difference between the two; Lempriere professes to treat only of ancient proper names; while the present edition is confined to *things* connected with classical as well as mediæval history. It may however be observed, that most of the leading cities and distinguished characters of antiquity are mentioned under the various heads of Architecture, Cities, Gods, Kings, Laws, Literature, Mythology, Oracles, Philosophers, Painting, Sculpture, War, &c.;—every article of a general nature usually commencing with Egypt or Assyria, as being the most ancient nations of which we have any authentic notices; and then proceeding, in chronological order, to the Phœnicians, Jews, Persians, Cretans, Greeks, Carthaginians, Romans, Celts, Saxons, Normans, &c., according as the matter under consideration was more or less connected therewith.

The labour which the compiler has bestowed in the collection of materials, during a long series of years, and their appropriate adaptation to the particular subjects under review, can only be appreciated by those who have been engaged in similar pursuits. Notwithstanding, he shall deem that labour requited, if his work should be considered as worthy of the end in view—the promotion of classical studies, and the ready acquisition of historical and archæological knowledge; and he earnestly hopes, that it will not only be found instructive and interesting to the young student, for whom it is principally intended, but that it will also form a useful volume of reference to the scholar, the

historian, and the antiquary. The Editor having been connected in early life, as corrector of the press, with Mr. Valpy, proprietor of the *Classical Journal*, &c., and for many years engaged in the conducting of the *Gentleman's Magazine* and other antiquarian and literary publications,—innumerable opportunities have arisen, for his collecting a variety of valuable materials, which could not otherwise have presented themselves. Having, moreover, an establishment of his own, for the printing of classical and antiquarian works, greater facilities have been thus afforded him, than a mere professional literate could possess.

Though the Editor has raised his superstructure partly on the labours of others, and has been obliged occasionally to borrow from various quarters whatever was calculated to illustrate his subjects, still many of the leading articles (some few of which have been already enumerated) may be considered as original,—so far as sentiment, arrangement of materials, and adaptation of facts to things and circumstances, can be considered in that light. The Author has been studious of adducing his authorities in most cases, where the reader was likely to desire farther information on the subject, or the details in question might be matters of doubt; yet he has throughout avoided unnecessarily loading his pages with numerous references, when no question could arise to render them useful. To enumerate the various works quoted would be tedious, and productive of little utility. It may not, however, be supererogatory to give the names of some of the leading authorities of classical antiquity, to whom the Editor is mainly indebted for the information communicated in these pages; viz., Sanchoniatho, Berossus, Manetho, Homer, Herodotus, Diodorus, Strabo, Xenophon, Polybius, Suetonius, Plutarch, Varro, Livy, Pliny, Cicero, Pausanias, Cæsar, Valerius, Pollux, Marcellinus, Vitruvius, Josephus, Dionysius, Lucretius, Horace, and Juvenal. The authors of modern times who have been quoted or referred to (as illustrating, by their writings, researches, or discoveries, the valuable information communicated by the Greek and Roman writers,) are chiefly—Faber, Bryant, Calmet, Rollin, Sabbathier, D'Origny Denon, Belzoni, Gell, Hamilton, Clarke, Alberti, Rennell, Le Roy, Aberdeen, Caylus, Stuart, Beckmann, Mountfaucon, Maffei, Kircher, Wilkinson, Hoskins, Winckelmann, Astle, Danet, Kennet, Potter, Harwood, Godwin, Adam, Wilson, Meyrick, and others. The writers on the manners and customs of the Middle age, are principally Bede, Matt. Paris, Froissart, Bracton, Du Cange, Spelman, Strutt, Fleta, Grose, Kennet, Hale, Speed, Blount, Selden, Gough, Dugdale, Blackstone, Brand, Whitaker, Hoare, Borlase, Lysons, Leland, Dallaway, Bourne, Manning, Fosbroke, Meyrick, Turner, Lowndes, &c.



**STOICS**, a celebrated sect of Greek philosophers, who took their name from *στοα* a porch, because they used to meet in the school of Zeno, the reputed founder of this sect, which was in a porch at Athens. They taught that man's supreme happiness consisted in living according and agreeable to nature and reason, and that God was the soul of the world. This school of philosophy was tingured with a shade of melancholy and austerity, from the disposition and habits of its founder. Zeno was educated in the principles of Platonism. His character was gloomy and almost unamiable; he looked down with contempt upon the pleasures of the world, and wished to extirpate all sensibility from the mind of man. The Stoic was taught to view with indifference health or sickness, riches or poverty, pain or pleasure, and to suffer no external circumstances to disturb the serenity of his mind. The Stoics even denied pain to be an evil, and maintained that the wise man may be happy in the midst of torture, because virtue itself is happiness. There was a great similarity in some points between the Stoics and the Indian Gymnosophists; both evinced much fortitude and intrepidity, and the strongest disgust for every species of amusement; and certainly no Stoic would have thought the death of Calanus a discredit to their sect.

**STOLA**, a long robe, with sleeves, worn by the Roman ladies and by the Greeks, called *καλασιρις*. Over this robe they wore a large mantle or cloak, called *palla*, and sometimes *pallium*, when they wore their habits of ceremony. The stola was their ordinary dress within doors, and the pallium was put on when they went abroad. All the eastern nations wore the stola; as appears by the ruins of Persepolis, the coins of Abgarus of Edessa, the Paris of the Villa Altempi, and Penthesilea coming to assist Priam, at the Villa Borghese. Semiramis, for better concealing her disguise as a man, rendered it common to that sex. From the Assyrians the stola passed to the Medes; and Cyrus, finding that it concealed the defects and adorned the person, introduced it among the Persians. Among the Greeks, the stola was common to both sexes. The Grecian *peplum*, under the name of *palla*, was worn over the stola; and this *palla*, but not the stola, was permitted to courtezans.—In the Middle age, the stola was a garment worn by priests, similar to those which we now call hoods; and sometimes it is taken for the archiepiscopal pall. (*Eadmer.*) The stola was distinguished from

the *orarium*, and was the proper garment of deacons. They, and sub-deacons, wore it upon the left shoulder. To be deprived of the stole and ring was a method of deposing abbots. The *stola sumpta* was a form in the greater excommunication.—*Dugd. Monast.*

**STONE CIRCLES**, ancient remains existing in different parts of Great Britain, as well as on the Continent, supposed to be of Celtic or Druidical origin. They may be described as a small area, with a slight vallum and ditch, probably of civil or religious use. The ditch inside the vallum, and entrance from the east, in general distinguish these circles from fortresses. Stonehenge, in Wilts, is a remarkable specimen. It is supposed to be of different eras; the original circle being ascribed to the Celtic tribes, and the grand circle of trilithons to the Belgæ, after they had driven away the Celts. At Marden and Abury the fosse is very deep, and within the vallum; at Stonehenge the vallum is very slight, and, as in works raised for defence, has the fosse on the outside. The ditch inside the vallum, as distinguishing these works from fortifications, the idea of Aubrey, has a reasonable foundation. The trilithons occur at Mycenæ, Telmessus, and among the Goths.

**STONE, ROSETTA**; a monumental stone found near Rosetta in Egypt, and now deposited in the British Museum. It has been considered of great value in assisting to elucidate the Egyptian hieroglyphics. (See **HIEROGLYPHICS.**) It contains three inscriptions, one in hieroglyphics, another in the ancient vernacular language of Egypt, and a third in the Greek language. These inscriptions record the services which Ptolemy the Fifth had rendered his country, and were engraved by order of the high-priests, when they were assembled at Memphis, for the purpose of investing him with the royal prerogative.

**STONEHENGE**, a celebrated monument of Celtic antiquity, situated on Salisbury Plain, in Wilts, upon the side of the river Avon. It stands in the middle of a flat area near the summit of a hill, six miles distant from Salisbury. It is enclosed by a double circular bank and ditch nearly thirty feet broad, after crossing which an ascent of thirty yards leads to the work. The whole fabric was originally composed of two circles and two ovals. The outer circle is about 108 feet in diameter, consisting, when entire, of sixty stones, thirty uprights, and thirty imposts, of which there are now remaining twenty-four uprights only, seventeen standing,

















